This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

WIDENER LIBRARY
HX G8U7 P

Digitized by Google

14457.9

HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

MEMOIRS

OF

THE LIFE AND WRITINGS

OF

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.

"Nor love thy life, nor hate: but what thou liv'st
"Live well: how long or short, permit to Heaven." MILTON.

BY

THOMAS ZOUCH, D.D. F.L.S.

PREBENDARY OF DURHAM.

YORK:

Printed by Thomas Wilson & Son, High-Ousegate;

For T. Payne, Pall-Mall, and J. Mawman, Poultry, London; and for Wilson & Son, York.

1808.

Digitized by Google

14457.9
~~14451.81~~

Digitized by Google

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

WILLIAM,

EARL OF LONSDALE,

IN THE COUNTY OF WESTMORELAND,

VISCOUNT AND BARON LOWTHER, OF WHITEHAVEN,

IN THE COUNTY OF CUMBERLAND,

AND KNIGHT OF

THE MOST NOBLE ORDER OF THE GARTER,

THIS WORK

IS INSCRIBED,

WITH EVERY SENTIMENT OF RESPECT,

By the AUTHOR.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

PREFACE.

SOME severe animadversions on the character of Sir Philip Sidney gave rise to the following work *. Whatever aspersions have been cast upon his memory, the candid and ingenuous reader will regard them with caution. The shafts of ridicule, when aimed against a virtuous man, lose their edge, and fall upon him blunted and despoiled of their force. The complexion of Sir Philip Sidney's conduct through life, was without a stain or a blemish. He admitted none into his friendship but good and wise men. His habits of intimacy with them, prove, beyond the possibility of a doubt, the congeniality of their minds.

> .....In companions
> That do converse and waste the time together,
> Whose souls do bear an equal yoke of love,
> There must be needs a like proportion
> Of lineaments, of manners, and of spirit. SHAKSPEARE.

IT has been remarked of him by an eminent writer, distinguished by his superior knowledge of English biography,

* Lord Orford's Works, vol. i. p. 342.

Digitized by Google

that " he approaches more nearly to the idea of a perfect " man as well as of a perfect knight, than any character of " any age or nation." *

THE letters, to which a reference is frequently made in this work, are those of Hubert Languet to Mr. Philip Sidney. They were originally printed at Frankfort in 1632. They were reprinted at Edinburgh in 1776, under the direction of Sir David Dalrymple. This collection of letters extends to a period nearly of seven years, from November 1573, to October 1580.

THE portrait prefixed to this volume, is taken from a very fine picture by Diego Velasquez de Silva, and now in the possession of Henry Vernon, Esquire, at Wentworth Castle, in Yorkshire.

---

* Aikin's Annual Review, vol. iii. p. 919.

Digitized by Google

MEMOIRS

OF

THE LIFE AND WRITINGS

OF

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.

CHAPTER I.

FROM THE BIRTH OF MR. PHILIP SIDNEY IN 1554, TO THE COMMENCEMENT OF HIS TRAVELS IN 1572.

NO period of the English history is more richly adorned with examples of genuine worth, than the golden reign of Queen Elizabeth. It was the age of reviving literature, when men began to be esteemed according to their wisdom. It was distinguished by the great glory of the establishment of the reformation, and ennobled by an uncommon display of public and domestic virtue. Among those truly

Digitized by Google

illustrious men, whose exalted characters contributed to the welfare of her government, the fame of Sir Philip Sidney shines forth with a splendour peculiarly attractive. He was born on the 29th day of November, 1554, at Penshurst, in the county of Kent. This place, pleasantly situated near the banks of the river Medway, was the ancient seat of Sir Stephen de Peneshurste or Penecestre, a warden of the Cinque Ports, and constable of Dover castle in the reign of Henry III.; and was granted by Edward VI. to Sir William Sidney and his heirs (1).

We learn from Ben Jonson's description of Penshurst, that it was not embellished with works of touch or marble, with polished pillars or a roof of gold; that it had other and better marks of its excellency, in the fertility of its soil, the salubrity of its air, and its charming scenery of wood and water. No vestiges now remain of that venerable oak, which traditionary fame announces to have been planted on the birth of Sir Philip Sidney (2), in the Park at Penshurst:

——— "Thou

(1) Having been possessed by many noble and distinguished persons, it was at length forfeited to the crown by the attainder of Sir Ralph Fane, in the reign of Edward VI.

Digitized by Google

" Thou hast thy walks for health, as well as sport,
" The mount to which the Dryads do resort,
" Where Pan and Bacchus their high feasts have made
" Beneath the broad beech, and the chesnut shade:
" That taller tree, which of a nut was set
" At his great birth, where all the Muses met."

Ben Jonson's Forest ii.

THIS rural object hath not been omitted by Mr. Waller in his beautiful verses, written during his residence at this delightful seat:

" Go, Boy, and carve this passion on the bark
" Of yonder tree, which stands the sacred mark
" Of noble Sidney's birth."——

IT is asserted on the authority of Verstegan, that the family of the Sidneys or Sydnies (3), originally of French extraction,

(2) What Cicero said of the Marian oak, has been applied to this tree, which was called " the bear's oak;" in allusion probably to one of the cognizances of the Sidney family:—" manet vero et semper manebit. Sata enim est ingenio, " Nullius autem agricolæ cultu stirps tam diuturna quam poetæ versu seminari potest."

De Legibus, l. i.

The oak was cut down in 1768.

(3) The two letters i and y were used indiscriminately in the surnames of English families; as in Savile or Savyle, Nevile or Nevyle, Leicester or Leycester. In the

Digitized by Google

extraction, came over into England about the reign of Henry II., to whom William de Sidney was chamberlain. The pride of noble descent is then only laudable, when it excites our endeavours to surpass others in every thing good and great; when it becomes an incentive to improve our moral and religious attainments. And, "as "nothing cheers the heart of greatness more, than the fair "glory of illustrious ancestors," so he alone beautifies their escutcheon, who adds to the memorials of their worth, the lustre of his own achievements; who by his learning, his wisdom, and his virtue, secures renown to himself.

SIR William Sidney, Knight Banneret, was chamberlain and steward of the household to Henry VIII. He is celebrated as one of the commanders who were present at the battle of Flodden (4), or Flouden, on the ninth

day

sixteenth century the English language had no standard of correct orthography, and the same words were often written differently by the same persons, in different parts of the same work. Nay, the change was so common, as to occur not only in the same page, but in the same line, and an instance may be given of one word undergoing twenty-five variations in the same manuscript.

(4) See "the Battle of Flodden." Part iii. Fit v.—ccxcvi.

Digitized by Google

day of September, 1515, when James IV. of Scotland was killed, and his army defeated by the English. Henry Sidney, his only surviving son, was from his infancy the companion and bosom-friend of Edward VI., who conferred upon him the honour of knighthood, constituted him ambassador to France, and afterward promoted him to several appointments near his person. He was at this time universally beloved and admired, as the most accomplished gentleman in Edward's court. This young prince died at Greenwich, on the fifth day of July, 1553, in the sixteenth year of his age, and the seventh of his reign. When the pangs of death came upon him, he said to Sir Henry Sidney, who was holding him in his arms: "I "am faint: Lord, have mercy on me, and receive my "spirit." And thus he breathed out his innocent soul (5).

To indulge in privacy that unaffected sorrow, which overwhelmed him on this occasion, Sir Henry retired to his seat at Penshurst; foreseeing probably the calamities in

which

(5) The excellent prayer which this good prince uttered three hours before his death, with his eyes closed, thinking that no one heard him, is inserted in Hollingshed's Chronicle, Vol. II. p. 1084: and Burnet's History of the Reformation, Vol. II. p. 224.

Digitized by Google

which his father in law, John Dudley, Duke of Northumberland, was soon to be involved, from his solicitude to place Lady Jane Grey on the vacant throne. He certainly did not incur the displeasure of Queen Mary, at this critical juncture. During the whole of her reign, he experienced repeated instances of her royal favour: and to his eldest son gave the name of PHILIP, out of compliment to her husband the King of Spain(6). He was appointed by her vice-treasurer, and general governor of all the King and Queen's revenues in the kingdom of Ireland. But in the succeeding reign, his great abilities were more immediately called forth into action with infinite credit to himself, and to the honour and advantage of his sovereign. Indeed a more exalted character, than that of Sir Henry Sidney, can scarcely be found in the volume of history. It deserves to be better known. In him we behold the brave soldier, the consummate general, the able counsellor, the wise legislator; while in the recesses of private life, he was no less estimable as a husband, a father, and a

friend:

(6) It was principally through the influence of Philip and his Spanish Nobles, that the royal mercy was extendend to Ambrose Dudley, Robert Dudley, the Lady Mary Sidney, and the Lady Catherine Hastings their sisters, the children of the Duke of Northumberland, in whose attainder they were implicated.

Digitized by Google

friend: firmly attached to the church of England, and adorning his Christian profession by his temperance and exemplary piety. He was Lord President of Wales, and for the space of eleven years discharged the administration of Lord Deputy of Ireland, with extraordinary justice and probity. Though labouring under the frequent attacks of a painful and dangerous malady (7), he was indefatigable in his exertions to crush rebellion. Nothing could be more desolate and forlorn than the state of Ireland in the middle of the sixteenth century:—a country which was inhabited by men addicted to robbery and massacre, sunk in brutality, in ignorance and the lowest superstition (8). To this distracted land, Sir Henry Sidney en-

" deavoured

(7) See a curious memoir in the Sidney papers relative to Sir Henry Sidney's state of health, with the medical directions prescribed for his diet, &c.

Memoirs of the Lives and Actions of the Sidneys, &c. p. 93—95.

(8) Spenser praises England by contrasting it with Ireland:

" No wailing there, no wretchedness is heard,
" No bloody issues, nor no leprosies;
" No grisely famine, nor no raging sweard;
" No nightly bod-rags, nor no hues and cries.
" The shepherds there abroad might safely lie
" On hills and downs, withouten dread or danger:
" No ravenous wolves the good man's hope destroy,
" No outlaws fell, affray the forest ranger."

Colin Clout's come home again.

Digitized by Google

deavoured to conciliate the blessings of peace and order; conducting himself with such sweetness and affability of manners, or rather with such an evangelical humility, as to engage the affections of all ranks of society. Conscious of the necessity of having the laws made known, he was the first who caused the ordinances and statutes of the realm to be printed and published. "Thus he brought "them out of the shadow into the sunshine (9): whereas "formerly they were only in manuscript, scarce ever seen "by one in an hundred subjected thereto."

His disposition was rather to seek after the antiquities and the public weal of those countries which he governed, than to obtain lands and revenues within the same: "For I "know not," saith Dr. Powel in his History of Wales, "one "foot of land that he had either in Ireland or Wales." In short, he has left to provincial governors an example of integrity, moderation, and wisdom, which was never surpassed in any subsequent or preceding age. Learned himself, he was the favourer of learned men. "Science,"

he

(9) "Ex umbrâ in solem eduxit."..... *Ware.*

Digitized by Google

he often said, " was to be honoured in whomsoever it " was found." His favourite motto was, " I will never " threaten." If I menace my enemy, I instruct him: to threaten a superior, is to endanger my own person: to threaten an inferior, is to disparage myself. Nothing more deeply offended him than ingratitude, ' that marble-hearted fiend;' especially, when he hoped or the world thought that he had deserved otherwise. If the warmth of resentment, enkindled in the human breast, be ever excusable; it is then particularly so, when the repeated accumulation of benefits is returned by unkindness, when the hand that has received a favour, is rudely lifted up against its benefactor:

" I hate ingratitude more in a man
" Than lying, vainness, babbling drunkenness,
" Or any taint of vice, whose strong corruption
" Inhabits our frail blood."—— *Shakespeare.*

SUCH was the father of Mr. Philip Sidney. Nor was his mother less illustrious or less amiable,—Mary, the eldest daughter of the unfortunate Duke of Northumberland. Alienated from the follies and vanities of life, by those tragical events in her own family, of which she had been

C an

Digitized by Google

an eye-witness, she devoted herself, like Cornelia the mother of the Gracchi, to an employment equally pleasing, useful, and honourable, the instruction of her children. It was her delight to form their early habits; to instil into their tender minds the principles of religion and virtue; to direct their passions to proper objects; to superintend not only their serious studies, but even their amusements. It must indeed be allowed that female excellency was never more conspicuous than at this period. Lady Jane Grey and her sisters—the Princess Elizabeth the disciple of Roger Ascham—Mary the learned Countess of Arundel—the four daughters of Sir Anthony Coke—the three sisters, Ladies Ann, Margaret, and Jane Seymour—the eldest daughter of Sir Thomas More—these and many others, whose names are recorded in the pages of biography, were the ornaments of their sex; not more ennobled by their high rank, than by their literary acquirements, their habits of virtuous employment.

THE annals of modern history present us with many instances of eminent persons, who by the wonderful energy of their natural powers, have arrived at an uncommon proficiency in science, during the earliest period of their lives;

Digitized by Google

lives; as Cardinal Bellarmine, Cardinal du Perrou, Torquato Tasso, Picus Mirandula, Joseph Scaliger, Lipsius, M. Pascal. To these we may be allowed to add Mr. Philip Sidney; "of whose youth," says one of his biographers, "I will report no other but this; that though I lived with "him, and knew him from a child, yet I never knew him "other than a man, with such a steadiness of mind, lovely "and familiar gravity, as carried grace and reverence "above greater years. His talk ever of knowledge, and "his very play tending to enrich his mind, so as even "his teachers found something in him to observe and "learn, above that which they had usually read or taught. "Which eminence by nature and industry made his worthy "father style him in my hearing (though I unseen) *the "bright ornament of his family*" (1).

THE advantages which he derived from domestic discipline, from the kind attention of a pious and affectionate mother, were happily improved by the assiduity and attention, with which he was nurtured in learning, at school, and at the university. He was placed at a school at

——— Shrewsbury,

(1) "Lumen familiæ suæ." *Sir Fulke Greville's Life of Sir Philip Sidney. p. 6.*

Digitized by Google

Shrewsbury, not far from Ludlow castle, the residence of his father, who was appointed Lord President of the marches of Wales, in the second year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth. Two letters, the one in Latin, the other in French, which he addressed to his father, while he was yet at school, and only twelve years old, produced the following valuable compendium of instruction, the original of which was found among the manuscripts deposited in the library at Penshurst. Sir Henry appears to have designed his son for foreign travel, and the business of a court very early; since at a time when boys are sufficiently employed in learning one or two dead languages, he had enabled him to correspond with himself in that which is usually styled the universal living one (2).

"*Sir Henry Sidney to his son Philip Sidney, at school at Shrewsbury in* 1566, *then being of the age of twelve years:*

"I have reaceaved too letters from yow, one written in "Latine, the other in French; which I take in good parte, "and will yow to exercise that practice of learninge often:

——— "for

(2) The candid reader will excuse the references which I have made to Sir Walter Raleigh's admonitions to his son, and Sir Matthew Hale's epistles to his children.

Digitized by Google

" for that will stand yow in moste steade, in that profession
" of lyf that yow are born to live in. And, since this ys
" my first letter that ever I did write to yow, I will not
" that yt be all emptie of some advyses, which my naturall
" care of yow provokethe me to wishe yow to folowe, as
" documents to yow in this yowr tendre age. Let yowr
" first actyon be, the lyfting up of yowr mynd to Al-
" mighty God, by harty prayer; and felingly dysgest the
" woords yow speake in prayer, with contynual meditation
" and thinkinge of him to whom yow praye (3), and of the

" matter

May the examples of such excellent men, as Sir Henry Sidney, Sir Walter Raleigh, and Lord Chief Justice Hale, have their due effect on all parents! Nor can young persons apply to themselves more salutary rules of moral conduct, than those which are here inculcated. Let not these maxims of prudence be slighted, as if they were subservient only to the purposes of common life, and beneath the notice of men of superior genius and abilities. Nothing is contemptible, which tends to meliorate our condition in this world, or to render our journey through life less painful and less irksome.

(3) This rule affords a proof of the piety of the father, and probably had the happiest effect on the son, who retained to the end of his life the deepest tincture of genuine piety.

" Every morning and every evening, upon your knees humbly commend yourselves
" to Almighty God in prayer, begging his mercy to pardon your sins, his grace to
" direct you, his providence to protect you, returning him humble thanks for all his dis-

Digitized by Google

" matter for which yow praye. And use this at an or-
" dinarye hower. Whereby the time ytself will put yow in
" remembraunce to doe that, which yow are accustomed
" to doe in that tyme. Apply yowr study to suche houres,
" as yowr discrete master dothe assign yow, earnestlye: and
" the time, I knowe, he will so lymitt, as shal be both suffi-
" cient for yowr learninge, and saf for yowr health. And
" mark the sens, and the matter of that yow read, as well
" as the woordes. So shal yow both enrieche your tonge

" with

" pensations towards you, yea even for his corrections and afflictions, entreating him to " give you wisdom and grace to make a sober, patient, humble, profitable use of them, " and in his due time to deliver you from them, concluding your prayer with the Lord's " prayer. This will be your certain mean to bring your mind into a right frame, to " procure you comfort and blessing, and to prevent thousands of inconveniences and " mischiefs, to which you will be otherwise subjected." *Sir Matthew Hale.*

" Serve God, let him be the author of all thy actions, commend all thy endeavours " to him that must either wither or prosper them; please him with prayer, lest, if he " frown, he confound all thy fortunes and labours. Like the drops of rain on the sandy " ground, let my experienced advice and fatherly instructions sink deep into thy " heart." *Sir Walter Raleigh's Instructions to his Son.*

The most virtuous and accomplished English Nobleman in the 17th century gave his last advice to his only son, the day before he suffered death: " Serve God " diligently, morning and evening, and recommend yourself unto him, and have him " before your eyes in all your ways."

The Earl of Strafford's Letters. Vol. II. p. 416.

Digitized by Google

" with woordes, and yowr wytte with matter; and judge-
" ment will growe as yeares growyth in yow. Be humble
" and obedient to yowr master, for unless yow frame yowr
" selfe to obey others, yea, and feale in yowr selfe what
" obedience is, yow shall never be able to teach others how
" to obey yow. Be curteese of gesture, and affable to all
" men, with diversitee of reverence, accordinge to the dig-
" nitie of the person. There ys nothing, that wynneth so
" much with so lytell cost. Use moderate dyet, so as,
" after yowr meate, yow may find yowr wytte fresher
" and not duller, and yowr body more lyvely, and not
" more heavye (4). Seldom drinke wine, and yet some-
" times doe, least, being enforced to drinke upon the
" sodayne, yow should find yowr self inflamed (5). Use
" exercise of bodye, but suche as ys without peryll of yowr

——— " yointes

(4) " If ever you expect to have a sound body, as well as a sound mind, carefully " avoid intemperance: the most temperate and sober persons are subject to sickness; " and diseases, but the intemperate can never be long without them."

Sir Matthew Hale.

(5) " The Rechabites were commanded by their father not to drink wine; and " they obeyed it, and had a blessing for it: my command to you is not so strict. I " allow you the moderate use of wine, and strong drink at your meats. I only for- " bid you the excess, or the unnecessary use of it, and those places and companies, " and artifices, that are temptations to it." *Ibid.*

Digitized by Google

" yointes or bones (6). It will encrease yowr force, and " enlardge yowr breathe. Delight to be cleanly, as well in " all parts of yowr bodye, as in yowr garments. It shall " make yow grateful in yche company, and otherwise " lothsome. Give yowr self to be merye, for yow dege- " nerate from yowr father, yf yow find not yowr self most " able in wytte and bodye, to doe any thinge when yow be " most mery: But let yowr myrthe be ever void of all " scurilitee, and bitinge woords to any man, for an wound " given by a woorde is oftentimes harder to be cured, then " that which is given with the swerd. Be yow rather " a herer, and bearer away of other mens talke, then a " begynner or procurer of speeche, otherwise yow shal be " counted to delight to hear yowr self speake (7). Yf yow

" heare

(6) " Beware of too much recreation. Some bodily exercise is necessary for se- " dentary men, but let it not be too frequent or too long." *Sir Matthew Hale.*

(7) " He that cannot restrain from much speaking, is like a city without walls; " and less pain in the world a man cannot take, than to hold his tongue. There- " fore if thou observest this rule in all assemblies, thou shalt seldom err; restrain thy " choler: hearken much, and speake little, for the tongue is the instrument of " the greatest good and greatest evil, that is done the world."

Sir Walter Raleigh.

Digitized by Google

" heare a wise sentence, or an apt phrase, commytte yt to " yowr memorye, with respect to the circumstaunce, when " yow shal speake yt. Let never othe be hard to come " out of yowr mouthe, nor woord of rybaudrye; detest yt " in others, so shal custome make to yowr selfe a lawe " against hit in yowr self (8). Be modest in yche as- " semble, and rather be rebuked of light felowes for meden " lyke shamefastnes, then of yowr sad frends for pearte " boldnes (9). Thinke upon every woorde that yow will

" speake,

" You will particularly practice that first and greatest rule for pleasing in conver- " sation as well as for drawing instruction and improvement from the company of " one's superiors in age and knowledge; namely, to be a patient, attentive, and well- " bred hearer, and to answer with modesty."—" Pythagoras enjoined his scholars an " absolute silence for a long noviciate. I am far from approving such a taciturnity: " but I highly recommend the end and intent of Pythagoras's injunction, which is to " dedicate the first parts of life more to hear and learn, than to be presuming, prompt, " and flippant in hazarding one's own rude notions of things."

Lord Chatham's letters to his Nephew.

(8) " Avoid swearing in your ordinary communication, unless called to it by the " Magistrate, and not only the grosser oaths, but imprecations, earnest and deep " protestations; as you have the commendable example of good men to justify a " solemn oath before a Magistrate, so you have the precept of our Saviour forbidding " it otherwise." *Sir Matthew Hale.*

(9) " Be not over earnest, loud, or insolent in talking, for it is unseemly: and earnest " and loud talking makes you overshoot and lose your business; when you should be

 " con-

Digitized by Google

" speake, before yow utter hit, and remembre how nature " hath rampared up, as yt were, the tonge with teeth, " lippes, yea and here (1) without the lippes, and all " batokening raynes or bridles, for the loose use of that " membre (2). Above all things tell no untruthe, no not " in trifels. The custome of hit is naughte, and let it not " satisfie yow, that, for a time, the hearers take yt for a " truthe, for after yt will be known as yt is, to yowr shame; " for ther cannot be a greater reproche to a gentellman, " then to be accounted a lyare (3). Study and endevour

" yowr

" considering, and pondering your thoughts, and how to express them significantly to " the purpose, you are striving to keep your tongue going, and to silence an opponent " not with reason but with noise." *Sir Mathew Hale.*

(1) Hair.

(2) " You have two eyes and two ears, but one tongue. You know my meaning. " This last you must imprison, as nature hath already done with a double fence, and " lips; or else she may imprison you. According to our countryman Mr. Hoskyn's " advice, when he was in the tower

" Vincula da linguæ, vel tibi vincla dabit."

Howel's familiar Letters, Vol. II. 5.

(3) " Let your speech be true, never speaking any thing for a truth, which you " know or believe to be false: it is a great sin against God, that gave you a tongue to " speak your mind, and not to speak a lye: it is a great offence against humanity " itself, for where there is no truth, there can be no safe society between man and " man:

Digitized by Google

" yowr self to be vertuously occupied. So shal yow make
" such an habite of well doinge in yow, that yow shal not
" knowe how to do evell, thoughe yow wold. Remember,
" my sonne, the noble blood yow are descended of, by
" yowr mother's side; and thinke that only, by vertuous
" lyf and good action, yow may be an ornament to that
" illustre famylie; and otherwise, through vice and slouthe,
" yow shal be counted *labes generis*, one of the greatest
" curses that can happen to man (4). Well, my liteli

" *Philippe*,

" man: and it is an injury to the speaker; for besides the bare disreputation it casts
" upon him, it doth in time bring a man to that baseness of mind, that he can scarce
" tell how to tell a truth, or to avoid lying, even when he hath no colour or necessity
" for it; and in time he comes to such a pass, that, as another man cannot believe he
" tells a truth, so he himself scarce knows when he tells a lye: and observe it, a lye
" ever returns with discovery, and shame at the last." *Sir Matthew Hale.*

" Take heed also, that thou be not found a lyar: for a lying spirit is hateful both
" to God and man. A lyar is commonly a coward, for he dares not avow truth. He
" is trusted of no man, he can have no credit, neither in public nor private."

Sir Walter Raleigh.

(4) The young person, who boasts of an illustrious descent, should always remember that " the ennoblements of the mind and genius are many times inherent in the " blood and lineage." Thus will the spark of laudable ambition be enkindled within him, while the disgrace that attends a debasement of principle, and an abandonment from that path of honour in which his ancestors walked, will be indelible.

Sir Philip Sidney thus speaks of his own descent. " I am a Dudley in blood, the " Duke's daughter's son; and I do acknowledge, though in all truth I may justly

Digitized by Google

" *Philippe*, this is ynough for me, and to muche I fear for " yow. But, yf I shall finde that this light meale of " digestione nourishe any thing the weake stomake of your " yonge capacitie, I will, as I find the same growe stronger, " fead yt with toofer foode.

" Your lovinge father, so long as you lyve in
" the feare of God,
" H. SYDNEY (5)."

THE state of young Sidney's health seems at this time to have been very delicate and precarious. A letter is extant from the Earl of Leicester to Dr. Matthew Parker, Archbishop of Canterbury, requesting a licence to allow his

——— Nephew

" affirm, that I am, by my father's side, of antient and always well-esteemed and well-" matched gentry; I do acknowledge, I say, that my chiefest honour is to be a " Dudley, and truly I am glad to have cause to set forth the nobility of that blood " whereof I am descended." *Reply to Leicester's Commonwealth.*

(5) At the end of Dr. Parr's collection of Archbishop Usher's letters, is a second letter ascribed to Sir Henry Sidney, as written by him to his son. But it appears from the best authority, that the writer of that letter was William Lord Burghley, to his second son Sir Robert Cecil, afterward Earl of Salisbury. No apology is necessary for inserting this letter in an appendix.

Digitized by Google

Nephew to eat flesh during the season of Lent, when he was only fifteen years old.

" I thank your good Grace most humbly for my great " cheere yesterday, and signify the same; but the chiefest " matter wherein I had to move your Grace was for a " license to be granted to my boy Philip Sidney, who is " somewhat subject to sickness, for eating flesh this Lent, for " which I then forgot to speak unto you: and have therefore " now thought good to desire your Grace to grant unto him " the said license in whatsoever form may seem best unto " you, so as he may have with him Mr. Doctor Cooper, who " is his tutor. And thus I humbly take my leave. From " Durham house this Wednesday the third of March 1569.

" Your Grace most humble to command,

" ROBERT LEICESTER (6)."

THE

(6) From a MS. in the library of Bennet College, Cambridge.

In Rymer's *Fœdera*, Vol. XVIII. p. 309, is the copy of an indulgence, bearing date on the 3d day of March, 1526, to Sir John Walter, knight, Lord Chief Baron of the Exchequer, to eat flesh on the days prohibited, during his life, on a remonstrance that fish was prejudicial to his health. It was extended to his wife, and other four persons at his table, on condition of his paying a mark yearly to the poor of his parish. In the reign

Digitized by Google

THE university of Oxford, which had long been denominated "the right eye of England and a light to the "whole realm," flourished at this time under the auspices of her Chancellor, Robert Dudley, Earl of Leicester (7). This Nobleman had strenuously exerted himself in his endeavours to defend her privileges, and to restore her ancient splendour and discipline. Her youth were thus excited to an emulation of study, and a desire of learning. The academical education of Sidney was completed under the tuition of Dr. Thomas Thornton, a very learned man, noted for the classic purity and elegance of his Latin style, and characterized as "the common refuge for young

——— "poor

reign of Henry VIII., Henry Earl of Surrey was imprisoned in Windsor Castle for eating flesh in Lent; and one of the most beautiful of his compositions is a very tender elegy written by him, when he was a prisoner, lamenting the happier days which he had formerly passed there.

(7) He was elected Chancellor of the University of Oxford, December 31st, 1564, on the resignation of Sir John Mason, Knight, Dean of Winchester: and he continued in that most honourable office to the time of his death in 1588.

"The Queen's countenance, and the Earl of Leicester's care, had such an effect "upon the diligence of this learned body, that within a few years after, it produced "more shining instances of real worth, than had ever before been sent abroad at the "same time, in any age whatever." *Nichols's progresses of Queen Elizabeth.*

Digitized by Google

"poor scholars of great hopes and parts." He was not only the preceptor of William Camden, "the prince of "English antiquaries;" but his generous benefactor and faithful friend. In the inscription on his monument, in the church of Ledbury, in the county of Hereford, where his remains are deposited, he is commemorated as "the tutor "of Sir Philip Sidney, when he was of Christ Church (8)." Dr. Thornton was assisted in the province of educating Mr. Sidney, by Mr. Robert Dorsett, an eminent tutor at Oxford, many of whose letters to this his pupil are yet extant in manuscript (9).

In 1560, the very year in which Mr. Sidney was admitted a member of the university, an overture was made, on the recommendation of Lord Leicester, for a marriage between this his nephew, and Anne, eldest daughter of Sir William Cecil (1), by his second wife, Mildred, one of the

daughters

(8) "Juventutis lectissimæ et inter alios Philippi Sidneii equitis nobilissimi acade-"micæ educationi præpositus erat" See "Willis's Cathedrals," Vol. II. p. 679.

(9) See the Appendix, No. II.

(1) This Lady was afterward married to Edward de Vere, Earl of Oxford, who died in 1604, without male issue. To her pen are attributed "Four epitaphes after the "death of her young sonne, the Lord Bulbecke, &c." printed in Soothern's Poems.—

In

Digitized by Google

daughters of Sir Anthony Coke. This alliance was proposed with no other view, than that of cementing the interests of two families, rivals to each other in greatness and power. Sir Henry Sidney gave it his entire approbation. In a letter to the secretary, dated on the twenty-fourth day of February, 1569, he expresses his sorrow on observing a coolness in the proceeding, "where "such good liking appeared in the beginning." "For my "part," he adds, "I never was more redye to perfect that "matter, then presently I am; assuringe you for my parte, "if I might have the greatest prince's daughter in Chris-"tendome for him, the matche spoken of betweene us on "my parte shold not be broken (2)." The principal obstacle to this treaty, which was never concluded, was probably the tender age of the parties.

During his residence at Oxford, our academician performed a scholastic exercise by holding a public disputation

with

In the Cotton MS. (Julius, F. x.) are several Latin poems in commendation of Anna Vera. See "Ritson's Bibliographia poetica," p. 380.

Of the character of this accomplished Lady, and of the cruel treatment of her by the Earl of Oxford, see "Strype's Annals of the Reformation," Vol. II. p. 175.

(2) "Sidney Papers," Vol. I. p. 44.

Digitized by Google

with Mr. Richard Carew, a gentleman commoner of Christ-Church, (then only fourteen years old (3), and yet of three years standing), in the presence of several of the nobility, and particularly of his two uncles, the Earls of Warwick and Leicester. Mr. Carew has modestly observed, that he was selected to engage in this literary contest, "from a wrong-conceived opinion touching his suffi-"ciency." This gentleman was afterward the author of a topographical work of great merit, entitled "The survey "of Cornwall," in the dedication of which to Sir Walter Raleigh, he subscribes himself, "your lordship's poore kins-"man." He is praised by his contemporaries as one who not only lived up to the dignity of his ancestors, but excelled them all in the ornaments of virtue. A Scotch poet, who celebrates him for his singular skill in history, for his poetry and knowledge of the laws, calls him another Livy, another Maro, another Papinian (4).

Mr.

(3) "Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, when he was but sixteen years old, took "the degree of Master of Arts at Cambridge, for which he kept his public acts, the "pregnancy of his genius then appearing to great advantage."

Birch's Memoirs, &c. Vol. 1. p. 74.

(4) He published a translation of several cantos of Tasso's "La Gerusalemme libe-rata;" under the title of "Godfrey of Bulloigne, or the recovery of Hierusalem: an "heroical

Digitized by Google

Mr. Camden, who has been already mentioned, even in the most early dawn of his life discovered the bent of his natural genius toward the study of antiquities. He says of himself, that, when a boy, he could neither hear nor see any thing of an antique appearance, without more than an ordinary attention and notice. While he was in the university, all his vacant hours were devoted to his favourite science. This propensity of nature was seconded by the importunity of his friends, and received very great encouragement from persons of the highest rank, and from none more than Mr. Philip Sidney.

Mr. Sidney pursued his studies for some time at Cambridge, and probably at Trinity College, where he had an opportunity of cultivating and improving that friendship, which he had already contracted with Mr. Fulke Greville his relation, and his companion at school.

It has been justly remarked, that the interval between the age of sixteen and one and twenty years, a period at

which

" heroical Poem, written in Italian by Seig. Torquato Tasso, and translated by R. C. " Esquire: and now the first part, containing five cantos, imprinted in both languages." He died in 1620.

Digitized by Google

which the cares of a common education cease, or are much relaxed, is that precise season of life, which requires all the attention of the most vigilant, and all the address of the wisest governours. With Mr. Sidney it did not pass away neglected, and destitute of improvement. The rose was not cankered in the bud: the precious years of his youth were not wasted in riot and dishonour, in vicious or profligate pursuits. "He cultivated not one art, or one "science, but the whole circle of arts and sciences: his "capacious and comprehensive mind aspiring to pre-"eminence in every part of knowledge attainable by "human genius or industry."—"Such," says Fuller, "was "his appetite for learning, that he could never be fed fast "enough therewith, and so quick and strong his digestion, "that he soon turned it into wholesome nourishment, and "thrived healthfully thereon." He acquired a complete knowledge of the Latin and Greek languages. Nothing could equal the diligence, with which this young student explored the stores of ancient literature, which had been recently imported into Europe. Hence at a more advanced season of his life, he was highly esteemed by the universities abroad and at home. His thirst after knowledge was insatiable: every invention was communicated to him; every discovery was encouraged and rewarded by him:

Digitized by Google

" Soldiers honoured him, and were so honoured by him,
" that no man thought he marched under the true banner
" of Mars, that had not obtained his approbation (5).
" There was not a cunning painter, a skilful engineer, an
" excellent musician, or any other artificer of extraordinary
" fame, that did not make himself known to this famous
" spirit, and found him his true friend without hire (6)."

HAVING inured himself to habits of regularity, under the care and vigilance of his academical instructors, he " put " off his gown," and left the university with an intention to travel, not for the purpose of gazing upon fine paintings and statues; of surveying sumptuous palaces and stately temples; but from a desire to enlarge his mind, and to secure to himself a dignity of character; " to obtain a " knowledge of the affairs, manners, laws, and learning " of other nations, that he might become the more service- " able to his own." In those days when travelling was considered as one of the principal causes of corrupt morals,

a wise

(5) He inherited a desire of military fame from his father, who, by his personal bravery, acquired the honour distinguished among the Romans by the term *opima spolia*, having with his own hand killed in battle James Mac-Connell, the principal leader of the Scots.

(6) " Sir Fulke Greville's Life of Sir Philip Sidney," p. 39.

Digitized by Google

a wise and sound policy dictated the expediency of observing the most rigid circumspection in permitting the English nobility and gentry to visit distant countries: and in general no persons were permitted to go abroad, except merchants, and those who were intended for a military life.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

FROM THE ARRIVAL OF MR. SIDNEY AT PARIS IN 1572, TO HIS RETURN INTO ENGLAND, IN 1575.

ON the twenty-fifth day of May, 1572, a license was granted by the Queen, to her trusty and well-beloved Philip Sidney, Esquire, to go out of England into parts beyond the seas, with three servants and four horses; to remain during the space of two years immediately following his departure out of the realm, for his attaining the knowledge of foreign languages. On this occasion, the Earl of Leicester tenderly recommended him to the notice, and in some measure committed him to the care of the English ambassador in France.

" MR. WALSINGHAM,

" FOR so much as my nephew Philip Sidney ys lycensed " to travyle, and doth presentlie repayre unto those partes

Digitized by Google

" with my L. Admyrall (7), I have thought good to com-
" mende him by these my friendlie lines unto you, as to
" one I am well assured will have a speciall care of him
" during his abode there. He is young and rawe, and no
" doubt shall find those countries, and the demeanors of
" the people somewhat straunge unto him: in which re-
" spect your good advice and counsell shall greatlie behove
" him for his better directions, which I do most heartilie
" pray you to voutsafe him, with any other friendlie assist-
" ance you shall thinke nedefull for him. His father
" and I do intend his further travayle, if the world be
" quiett, and you shall so thinke it convenient for him.
" I pray you we may be advertised thereof, to the end
" the same his travayle may be thereupon directed ac-
" cordinglie.

" Your vearie friende,

" R. LEYCESTER (8)."

ON

(7) Edward Clinton, Earl of Lincoln, was Lord Admiral of the sea, in 1572. Being appointed ambassador extraordinary from England, he departed with a numerous train of nobility and gentry from London, on the 26th day of May, in that year, and was entertained with banqueting and feasting by the French King, the Admiral, and the Dukes of Anjou and Alençon. *Stowe's Chronicle, p. 672.*

(8) " From a MS. in the British Museum:" Vespasian, F. 6, 726.

Digitized by Google

On his arrival at Paris, the French King, Charles IX. appeared to be highly gratified with his ingenuous manners and conversation. With an affectation of sincere esteem, he gave him an early proof of his royal favour, by advancing him to the office of gentleman ordinary of his chamber. Having previously taken the oaths usually required, Mr. Sidney was admitted to it on the ninth day of August. This promotion has been generally considered, not so much an indication of real regard, as an unworthy and insidious artifice to conceal the design, which was then formed, of destroying the Protestants. He had not held this office above a fortnight, when he became a spectator of that hideous and savage massacre of the Huguenots, which filled all Europe with indignation, amazement, and terrour.

At this time he experienced a more honourable discrimination of his merit in the condescension of Henry Bourbon, the young King of Navarre, afterward Henry IV. of France. This prince, whose great talents were contrasted with great faults, while the adulation of his courtiers had declared him to be born for the delight and felicity of mankind, was then respected for his courage, his wisdom, and his benevolence. He saw and admired in Mr.

Digitized by Google

Philip Sidney the gradual expansion of those amiable qualities, which he himself possessed in so extraordinary a degree.

AFTER a long and calamitous period of civil war, France enjoyed or seemed to enjoy peace at home, while she contracted a defensive alliance with England. In the midst of her tranquillity and repose, the princes of the house of Guise, always ambitious to aggrandize themselves, meditated their secret plots of ruin and destruction: Deceived by the semblance of the tenderest affection and regard, the principal leaders of the Huguenots, with a numerous train of their adherents, arrived at Paris, to be present at the marriage between the King of Navarre, and the Lady Margaret, sister to the French monarch (9).—Here Festivity and Mirth seemed to have fixed their abode. The unsuspecting guests were received with the most solemn assurances of safety and protection; allured by flattering promises, and, with all the specious and

fasci-

(9) Pope Pius V. refused his consent to the marriage, while he granted a dispensation to Philip King of Spain, to marry the daughter of his sister and of Maximilian his near kinsman, making the difference of religion a greater obstacle to marriage, than the degrees of consanguinity forbidden by the Levitical law.

Continuation of Platina's Lives of the Popes.

Digitized by Google

fascinating professions of kindness, admitted into the most unbounded confidence. It is asserted on the best authority, that the Lords Leicester and Burleigh were invited out of England (1), and the Palatine Elector's sons out of Germany, under the colour of doing them honour, that, being brought into the net, both they and with them the whole Protestant interest, might, with one stroke, suffer a deadly wound (2). This scene of dissimulation and fraud, which continued about seven months, was terminated on the evening of Sunday the twenty-fourth day of August, being the sixth day after the celebration of the royal marriage, by a ghastly and mournful catastrophe. At the approach of midnight, upon a signal being given by the king's orders, murder and assassination issued forth with ungovernable fury from the very inmost chambers of the royal palace. The streets of Paris, strewed with scattered

limbs

(1) These two noblemen were considered as the principal promoters of the reformation in England. Archbishop Parker's Bible printed in 1568 is adorned with three portraits. 1. Of Queen Elizabeth: On each side of her are the emblems of Religion and Charity sitting. 2. Of the Earl of Leicester, of half length, in armour, holding a truncheon in his left hand. Underneath the picture is his motto, DROIT ET LOYAL. 3. Of Secretary Cecil, in his gown and furs, and holding in his left hand an Hebrew Psalter open. On the chapiters of the pillars betwixt which he stands, is his motto,

COR UNUM ET VIA UNA.

(2) "Camden's Annals," 1572.

Digitized by Google

limbs and mutilated carcases, flowed with streams of guiltless blood. Ten thousand Protestants were massacred without distinction of age, sex, or condition (3). The dreadful effects of this indiscriminate carnage were widely extended through many of the provincial towns. Is it possible to imagine that a panegyrist should be found to celebrate this deed of treachery and relentless cruelty? Alas! such a panegyrist did really appear in the person of M. Antonius Muretus, the pupil of Julius Cæsar Scaliger, and one of the most elegant, and the most learned writers of his time. In an oration, illuminated with all the splendour of Ciceronian eloquence, and delivered at Rome in the presence of Pope Gregory XIII., he congratulated his Holiness on this dishonourable victory over the heretics (4).

Strada,

(3) Of these above five hundred were barons, knights, and gentlemen, who had held the chief employment in the late war, and were now met together from all parts to honour the King of Navarre's marriage. *Davila.*

(4) " O noctem illam memorabilem et in fastis eximiæ alicujus notæ adjectione " signandam, quæ paucorum seditiosorum interitu regem a præsenti cædis periculo, " regnum a perpetuâ civilium bellorum formidine liberavit! Quâ quidem nocte " stellas equidem luxisse solito nitidius arbitror, et flumen Sequanam majores undas " volvisse, quo citius impurorum hominum cadavera evolveret et exoneraret in mare."

Mureti Opera, Vol. 1. *p.* 177.

In this night of terrour, the celebrated Peter Ramus was assassinated, and his dead body treated with many circumstances of brutal barbarity. He was a great orator, a man of the strictest morals, sober, chaste, fearing God, and zealous for the reformed religion.

Digitized by Google

Strada, in his history of the Belgic war, represents the massacre as a punishment deservedly inflicted on a party and faction, that had conspired against the reigning prince. Hence many writers, of the same religious persuasion with Strada, have ventured to defend it, as an act of justice sanctioned by Heaven itself (5). Processions, thanksgivings, and a jubilee, were instituted in memory of the infamous perfidy. Paintings, representing this scene of barbarity, were suspended in the apartments of the Vatican; nor was there wanting a poet to commend the Parisian slaughter as an achievement worthy of immortal fame. A medal was struck with an inscription expressive of the approbation, with which the Pope viewed the murder of Admiral Coligni. Let it not be forgotten that the Roman pontiff distributed his indulgences with an unlimited munificence in commemoration of this event. The massacre was approved and applauded in Spain. Philip II. was previously apprized of it, and cheerfully consented to it. An annotator on the history of Thuanus, exults in the opportunity of applying to those who had

pro-

(5) Strada, Dec. II. L. vii.—On one side of a medal struck at Paris, was the French King sitting on a throne, and treading upon dead bodies, with this motto: *Virtus in rebelles*; and on the reverse, the arms of France, with these words: *Pietas excitavit justitiam, 24 Augusti*, 1572.

Digitized by Google

promoted it, the words of that hard-hearted tyrant, the Roman Emperor Vitellius, "that the smell of the dead "bodies of his enemies, was to him far more grateful "than the richest and most costly perfumes (6)." The silent resentment of the English court is thus described by Salignac de la Motte Fenelon, the French ambassador, in the narrative which he has given of his first audience at Woodstock, after the perpetration of this detestable deed.— "A gloomy sorrow," he writes, "sat on every face, "Silence, as in the dead of night, reigned through all the "chambers of the royal apartments: the ladies and "courtiers were ranged on each side, all clad in deep "mourning; and, as I passed through them, not one "bestowed on me a civil look, or made the least "return to my salutes." The ambassador, sensible of the national disgrace, hesitated not to acknowledge himself ashamed of bearing the name of a Frenchman (7).

M. DE

(6) "Graveolentiam scilicet hostilium cadaverum quibusvis odoribus et pigmentis "esse sibi fragrantiorem." *Sueton. Vitell. c. 10.*

(7) When this virtuous Frenchman was ordered by his sovereign, Charles IX. to explain to the Queen of England the reasons they had for permitting this horrid transaction: "I should," said he, "Sire, make myself an accompliee in that terrible busi- "ness, were I to attempt to palliate it. Your Majesty had better address yourself to "those persons who advised it." *See Sewel's Biographiana. Vol. 1. p. 168.*

Digitized by Google

M. DE VOLTAIRE, in the second canto of his Henriade, has introduced a description of this dismal tragedy, by no means exceeding the bounds of truth (8). In 1575 Charles IX. before he was full twenty-five years of age, died in the most exquisite agonies, "bathed in his own "blood, which gushed out of all the passages of his body, "and even spouted through its pores." The butchery, in the guilt of which he had been so deeply involved, was always the terrific subject of his thoughts; and he continued to the last moment of his life, to testify a real sorrow and remorse for it (9). Queen Elizabeth had declared, in words almost prophetic, that if the French King did not

use

(8) Two of our dramatic poets have introduced this subject on the English stage.—1. "The massacre of Paris, a tragedy, acted at the theatre royal 1690. By "Nathaniel Lee." 2. "The massacre of Paris with the death of the Duke of Guise, "a tragedy, acted by the Lord Admiral's servants. By Mr. Christopher Marlow."

(9) Charles IX. of France is described as resembling Nero in the exquisite agony of his sorrow after the murder of his mother—"sometimes remaining torpid in silence, "often arising through fear, and deprived of his understanding, waiting for the ap- "proach of light, as if it was to accomplish his destruction"—[modo per silentium defixus, impius pavore exurgens, et mentis inops, lucem opperiens tanquam exitium allaturam. *Tacit. Annal. XIV.* 10.] "In vain did he attempt to sooth the anguish "of his heart by the powers of music: he was struck with a deep abhorrence of his "guilt; and with all the poignancy of penitential sorrow, he formed a resolution to "abstain from the effusion of Christian blood."

Digitized by Google

use his power to make some amends for so much blood so horribly shed, God who seeth the hearts of all, as well princes as others, would show his justice in time and place, when his honour should be therein glorified, as the author of all justice, and the avenger of all the blood-shedding of the innocents (1). The marriage of the King of Navarre, with Margaret de Valois, was peculiarly unfortunate. An union, cemented with the blood of innocent persons, could prove only the source of woe and unnumbered miseries. The Duke of Guise and the Cardinal his brother, who were both equally implicated in guilt, were afterward assassinated by the command of Henry III. of France, who was himself murdered by a fanatic monk, though he endeavoured to atone for his great crimes by a most scrupulous observance of all the rites and ceremonies of his religion (2). If the pen of the historian or biographer be employed in a detail of the folly and wickedness of men,

their

(1) *Digges's compleat Ambassador, p.* 249.—With what energy did Sir Thomas Smith express himself on this topic in a letter to Walsingham? "Will God, think "you, still sleep? Will not their blood ask vengeance,—shall not the earth be &c. "cursed, that hath sucked up the innocent blood poured out like water upon it? I "am glad you shall come home, and would wish you were at home out of that coun- "try, so contaminate with innocent blood, that the sun cannot look upon it, but to "propagate the wrath and vengeance of God." *Ibid. p.* 262.

Digitized by Google

their punishment, and the retribution of Divine Justice equally demand his attention.

In the general consternation, which prevailed at this awful season of unforeseen and unexpected treachery, Mr. Sidney preserved his own life, by taking refuge, with several of his countrymen, in the house of Sir Francis Walsingham. At the instance of Lord Leicester, who had almost a paternal affection for his nephew, a memorial was presented

without

(2) Epitaph on the Tomb which contained the Heart of Henry III. late King of France and Poland; slain 1589 by a Jacobine Friar.

" Adsta, viator, et dole regum vicem.
" Cor Regis isto conditum est sub marmore,
" Qui jura Gallis, jura Sarmatis dedit.
" Tectus cucullo hunc sustulit sicarius.
" Abi, viator, et dole regum vicem.

Thus paraphrastically Englished.

" Whether thy choice or chance thee hither brings,
" Stay passenger, and waile the hap of kings,
" This little stone a great king's heart doth hold,
" That rul'd the fickle French and Polackes bold;
" Whom with a mighty warlike host attended,
" With traiterous knife a couled monster ended.
" So fraile are even the highest earthly things,
" Go, passenger, and waile the hap of kings. F. D.

Davison's Poems. 1621. *p.* 260.

Digitized by Google

without delay to Walsingham, by order of the privy council. In a long letter, wherein matters of great political importance are discussed, it is added—"Where we understand "that the English gent. who were at Paris at the time of "the execution of the murther, are forced to retire to "your house, where they did wisely: for your care of "them, we and their friends are beholding to you, and "we think good that they be advised to return home; "and namely, we desire you to procure for the Lord "Wharton (3) and Mr. Philip Sidney, the licence and "safe conduct to come thence; and so we require you to "give them true knowledge of our minds thereon."

Sept. 9, 1572.

Not satisfied with sending this memorial, Leicester urged the return of his relation, in a private letter addressed to Walsingham, wherein he freely delivered his sentiments

on

(3) Thomas Wharton, Esq. was in 1544 created Baron Wharton, in Westmoreland. He signalized himself at the battle of Pinkey, or Musselburgh, in 1547. He died July 14, 1572, and was succeeded by his eldest son Philip, the young nobleman for whose safety the privy council expressed such anxiety. Though he himself escaped from the massacre, his tutor, who had arrived from England the day before, was slain.—"Alas! he was acquainted with no one, nor could be partaker of any "evil dealing." *Digges's compleat Ambassador, p. 252.*

Digitized by Google

on the cruel and perfidious conduct of the French court. The supine apathy of the English ministry at this time, excites our surprise. The common intercourse which subsisted between the two courts, was far from being interrupted. The negotiation for establishing a more intimate union, by the marriage of the Queen with a Prince of the house of Valois, was immediately renewed. It has been remarked that this behaviour was disgraceful to the English nation, and that it was entirely different from that of Cromwell in the seventeenth century, on occasion of the Piedmontese slaughter, which is the subject of one of Milton's beautiful sonnets. Firm and resolute in extending his assistance to the afflicted Protestants in Piedmont, the Protector rescued them from misery and oppression. His very name overwhelmed their enemies with terrour and confusion. The Duke of Savoy listened to the representations of the English government; and the Pope, " the triple tyrant," as Milton calls him in the sonnet abovementioned, was alarmed at the denunciation of Cromwell's avenging justice, " that his ships in the " Mediterranean would visit Civita Vecchia, and the " sound of his cannon be heard in Rome." Be this as it may, the political conduct of Elizabeth seems to have been dictated by the most consummate wisdom. The evil

Digitized by Google

was already done, and though the assassination was atrocious in the extreme, it was not within her province to involve her subjects in a destructive war, while she had already very powerful enemies to contend with, both at home and abroad. She openly declared her abhorrence of the savage butchery; her counsellors uniformly agreed with her in protesting against it. What language could be more emphatically descriptive of their sentiments than that which they used? They termed it—"the late execu-"tion"—"the murther"—"the lamentable tragedy which "doth make all Christians look for a just revenge at God's "hands"—"a treason and cruelty more barbarous than "ever the Scythians used"—"the great slaughter and "horrible murther, without regard either had to sex or "age of those of the religion." They declared "that "seals or words of princes were traps to catch the innocent, "and to bring them to butchery."

Mr. Philip Sidney, having thus escaped the danger which threatened him, proceeded in his travels without returning into England. On his departure from Paris, Sir Francis Walsingham, who appears to have always entertained a strong predilection in his favour, apprehensive lest some sinister event should occur from the evil practices

Digitized by Google

of his servants, recommended him to the care of Dr. John Watson, then Dean, and afterward Bishop of Winchester. Thus were his youthful years guarded from evil, under the guidance of a wise and good man. Of the nature of those practices it is in vain to conjecture. Much praise is due to the tenderness and anxiety, with which our ancestors watched over the morals of our English youth, who travelled abroad.

A report having prevailed, that one of the attendants of Mr. Sidney died on the road, Walsingham's anxiety impelled him to address the Earl of Leicester in the following letter:

" *To the right honourable and his very good Lord, the Earl of* " *Leicester.*"

" It may please your Lordship to understand, that by " certain that returned from Frankfort, I understand that one " of the gentlemen that departed hence with intention " to accompany your nephew Mr. Philip Sidney to " Heidelburg, died by the way at a place called Bladin in " Lorrain, who by divers conjectures I took to be the Dean " of Winchester, who, as I advertised your Lordship by " Mr. Argall, I employed to encounter the evil practices of

Digitized by Google

" your said nephew's servants. If therefore your Lordship, " he being now void, shall not speedily take order in that " behalf (if already it be not done) the young gentleman " your nephew shall be in danger of a very lewd practice, " which were great pitie in respect of the rare gifts that " are in him. Touching news I refer your honor to these " inclosed occurrents, and the report of this bearer, to " whom I have given order to communicate certain things " unto you. And so leaving further to trouble your honor " at this present, I most humbly take my leave. At Paris " the 17th of October

" FR. WALSINGHAM."

THE places which he visited in Germany, Hungary, Italy, and Belgium, have been enumerated by different writers. Having left Paris, he pursued his journey through Lorrain, by Strasburgh and Heidelburg to Frankfort. At the latter place he lodged at the house of a celebrated printer, Andrew Wechel (4). Here he had the singular happiness

of

(4) The flourishing state of reviving literature is in a great measure to be attributed to the laudable industry of those ingenious printers, who lived in the sixteenth century.—Among these are to be classed Christian and Andrew Wechel, the father and the son, both natives of Paris. The Hebrew and Greek books, printed by the former, were admired

Digitized by Google

of being first honoured with the friendship of one of the brightest ornaments of literature, HUBERT LANGUET, who was then a resident from the Elector of Saxony. To him he was principally indebted for his extensive knowledge of the customs and usages of nations, their interests, their governments, their laws (5). This excellent person was born in 1518, at Viteaux in France. Having completed his studies in his native country, he went to Italy in 1547, and was elected professor of civil law in the university

mired for their correctness, the number of the errata of the press in a folio book not exceeding two. Andrew Wechel, the son, was at Paris in 1572, on that day of blood, which will for ever disgrace the French calendar; and owed his safety to Hubert Languet, who lodged in his house. He afterward removed to Frankfort, where by his integrity, his learning, and professional skill, he acquired great reputation. It was usual for scholars to lodge in the houses of eminent printers. Robert Stephens had frequently ten learned men in his house, all of them foreigners, whose occasional employment it was to correct his impressions. Hubert Languet, while he resided at Antwerp, was the guest of Christopher Plantinus.

(5) They might probably have not been unknown to each other at Paris, in 1572. Languet was there at the time of the massacre, as he intimates in a letter to Sidney, Jan. 1, 1574, in which he promises to send him an oration, which he spoke before the French King three years before, in the name of some German princes—" *in quâ sunt* " *quædam ita liberè dicta, ut in tumultu Parisiensi valde metuerem, ne ea res esset mihi* " *exitio,*"—" in which are some things uttered with such freedom, that I was much " afraid, lest, in the Parisian tumult, that circumstance might have occasioned " my destruction."

Digitized by Google

versity of Padua. His intimacy with Philip Melancthon, the friend and companion of Martin Luther, arose from the perusal of a book written by that amiable man, whom he visited in 1549, at Wirtemberg, in Saxony, where he then publicly renounced the errors of Popery. Languet could not leave Melancthon, and Melancthon was no less charmed with Languet, whose conversation was equally instructive and delightful. He was universally admired and esteemed for his vast erudition, his capacious memory, his sagacity in discovering the real characters of men, his eloquence, the classic elegance of his language, his prudence, his temperance, the suavity of his manners, and his extraordinary modesty (6). No one knew more intimately the political history of his own times, the tempers, the views and pursuits of all the kings and princes of Europe. He possessed the confidence of Gustavus, King of Sweden; of Augustus, Elector of Saxony; and, above them all, of William, Prince of Orange. These exalted personages successively employed him in several important negotiations. To Thuanus, the historian, he endeared himself by his

(6) " Ubi cum Langueto colloquutus fueris, delectaberis non solum sermonibus " ejus, qui sunt pleni prudentiæ, sed etiam modestiâ, quæ in hoc viro, quanquam penè totam Europam vidit, et multos cognovit, singularis est."

P. Melancthonis Epistolæ.

Digitized by Google

his candour, his probity, his nice and exact judgment in public and private affairs. This incomparable writer, having at one time found him disengaged, spent three days with him, and was so rivetted to him, by the allurements of his conversation, that he could not tear himself away from his presence.

SUCH was the companion, such was the friend, of Mr. Sidney. Those traces of native goodness, which he perceived in the countenance and discourse of this young man, fixed so strong and favourable an impression in his mind, that he immediately determined to solicit his friendship. On his good fortune in possessing a treasure, which he deemed inestimable, he frequently felicitated himself. "That day," he said, "on which I first beheld "him with my eyes, shone propitious to me." His attachment to him suffered no abatement; his affection for him was far from being common; he deeply interested himself in all his concerns; he had no other object in view than to accelerate his advancement in learning, in virtue, in religion—to render him useful to the public, and an ornament to his country. And nothing could be more honourable to a youth of the age of nineteen years, than the choice of such a companion and guide.

Digitized by Google

MR. SIDNEY has in grateful strains described the character of his beloved friend.

The song I sang old LANGUET had me taught,
Languet, the shepherd best swift Ister knew,
For clarkly read, and hating what is naught,
For faithful heart, clean hands, and mouth as true.
With his sweet skill my skilless youth he drew
To have a feeling taste of him that sits
Beyond the heaven, far more beyond your wits.

He said the musick best thilk powers pleased
Was jump (7) concord between our wit and will;
Where highest notes to godliness are raised,
And lowest sink not down to jot of ill:
With old true tales he wont my ears to fill,
How sheperds did of yore, how now they thrive
Spoiling thir flock, or while 'twixt them they strive.

He liked me, but pitied lustful youth:
His good strong staff my slipp'ry years up bore:
He still hoped well, because I loved truth.

Arcadia. B. iii.

IF Languet may be justly compared to Socrates on account of his wisdom, and the innocence and integrity of his life, the character of Sidney is infinitely superior to that of Alcibiades. Like the Athenian youth, he was admired for the

(7) A word used by Shakespeare—"an exact concord."

Digitized by Google

the beauty and gracefulness of his person—his noble birth—the benignity of his disposition—his pleasing manners and insinuating address. But from the vices of Alcibiades he was totally abhorrent. He did not disgrace himself by luxury, by insolence and pride, by effeminacy and intemperance, by contempt of all law, by impiety.

A more striking parallel might be formed, by reminding the reader of the character and conduct of the sage and experienced Mentor, as described by the amiable Fenelon, glowing with all the fervour of a father's love towards the son of Ulysses; ever vigilant, ever attentive to direct his judgment, to improve his taste, to imbue his mind with "the sweets of sweet Philosophy;" in short to render him

> "—— complete in feature and in mind
> "With all good grace to grace a gentleman;"

while Mr Sidney, like another Telemachus, "full of noble "device," exhibits to us a beautiful model of modesty, of an humble and teachable disposition, and indeed of all those valuable qualities which embellish and exalt a generous mind.

Languet did not personally attend his young friend during the whole period of his absence from England, but

Digitized by Google

saw him occasionally, and spent several months with him at different times. When they were separated from each other, he renewed in his letters the strongest assurances of his regard, intermixed with the most useful and most endearing lessons of advice (8). These letters are written with an elegance and purity of language, not unworthy of the best and most polished authors of Rome in the Augustan age (9).

In September 1573, Mr. Sidney seems to have been attended only by his servants. Languet, having commended him for his noble purpose of surveying the manners and cities of men, because the judgment is formed and the manners regulated by knowledge thus acquired, exceedingly regrets that his friend was without a companion, who could instruct him in the customs and institutions of the countries which he visited; who could also introduce him to learned men, and act as his interpreter. He adds, that

(8) Lord Orford's remarks on Languet's letters to Mr. Sidney, prove that he had not read them at all, or at least that he had read them superficially and judged of them hastily.

(9) Mr. Sidney was once so extremely affected at leaving Languet, that he shed tears, and from the exquisite sorrow which he felt, was scarcely able to bid him farewell. *Langueti, Epis.* 11.

Digitized by Google

that it would have been in his power to have recommended a person thus qualified, if an application had been made to him (1).

At Vienna Mr. Sidney learned horsemanship, the use of arms, and all those manly and martial exercises, which were suitable to his youth and nobleness of birth. In the beginning of his "defence of poesy," he gives a pleasant relation of the partiality of his equestrian preceptor, John Pietro Pugliano, in favour of his own professional occupation. This man, who had the place of an equerry in the Emperor's stables, spoke so eloquently of that noble animal the horse, of his beauty, his faithfulness, and his courage, that his pupil facetiously says, "If I had not been a "piece of a logician, before I came to him, I think he would "have persuaded me to have wished myself an horse (2)."

During

(1) "Doleo te non habere cum quo in itinere de variis rebus sermones miscere "possis, et qui te mores ac instituta hominum ad quos venis doceat, ad doctos viros "deducat, et interpretis officio, ubi est opus, fungatur. Ejusmodi itineris comitem "tibi fortè procuravissem, si me tui instituti conscium esse voluisses."

Epist. Languети ad Sidneium I.

(2) Many readers will be highly gratified with the description of the management of an horse in the Arcadia (B. 11) beggining thus—"O how well it did with "Dorus

Digitized by Google

DURING his stay at Vienna he acquired all those accomplishments, with which the Conte Baldassar Castiglione has adorned his courtier. He excelled at tilt or tournament, in managing all sorts of weapons, in playing at tennis, in diversions of trial and skill, in music, in all the exercises that suited a noble cavalier. His person, his aspect, his discourse, his every gesture were embellished with dignity and grace (3).

HE was at Venice in 1574. This city was then the seat of pleasure and idle dissipation. Here the young traveller too often consumed his fortune, and brought indelible disgrace to himself by his ignorance, his licentiousness, and immorality (4). But with the son of Sir Henry and Lady Mary Sidney it was otherwise. Mindful of those parental precepts, which were instilled into his breast in

his

" *Doris* to see with what a grace he presented himself before me on horseback, " making majesty wait upon humbleness," &c.

(3) " Audio te juvenem summis scientiis apprimè ornatum, excultumque artibus " liberalibus, nobilique viro dignis. Audio robur vimque corporis in te maximam " esse, quam in equitando, in torquendis hastis et jaculandis, in vibrando gladio, in " currendo, sæpe et ostentas et imitandam proponis viris."

Sc. Gentilis ad Philippum Sidnæum epistola.

Digitized by Google

his tender years, he did not associate himself with bold and unlettered young men, who abhorred all serious discourse, and in the spirit of drollery and impiety, laughed at religion, and set at naught every obligation of duty. A profligate and profane character was to him the object of aversion and detestation; equally to be avoided with the pestilential fever or the venomous serpent. No stronger proof of the natural goodness of his heart can be adduced, than the selection of his companions from among the most virtuous and most learned of his contemporaries. Lord Clarendon hath somewhere remarked, that "in the "whole course of his life he never knew one man, of "what condition soever, arrive to any degree of reputation "in the world, who made choice of or delighted in the "company or conversation of those, who in their qualities "were inferior or in their parts not much superior to "himself."

SEVERAL

(4) The ignorance of the young English traveller is the subject of Shakespeare's satire in "The Merchant of Venice," Act 1. S. 2.

NAR. What say you to Falconbridge, the young baron of England?

PORT. You know I say nothing to him, for he understands not me, nor I him. He hath neither Latin, French, nor Italian.

Digitized by Google

SEVERAL circumstances concur to render it probable that he was not unknown to Paolo Sarpi, the faithful historian of the council of Trent. They were congenial in their temper and pursuits, equally eager to excel in every branch of knowledge. This learned ecclesiastic was two years older than Mr. Sidney, and when he was only twenty years of age, had discovered a profundity of erudition, which was surpassed only by his modesty, his humility, and his mildness. His fame was extended far beyond the limits of the Venetian territory. If virtuous minds feel an attraction towards each other, these two ingenious youths, residing in the same city and endowed with great and splendid talents, could scarcely have avoided an union of friendship. The fact is indisputable, that while Mr. Sidney remained in Venice, he was charmed with the conversation of the learned men who resided there, and the character of Paolo Sarpi was then too brilliant not to engage his notice.

AMONG those of his own countrymen, with whom he lived in habits of intimacy at this time, were Mr. Edward Wotton and Mr. Daniel Rogers. The former of these gentlemen, an elder brother to the famous Sir Henry Wotton, was knighted by Queen Elizabeth, in 1592, and

Digitized by Google

made comptroller of her household. He was honoured with many important employments in the state during her reign, and sent several times ambassador to foreign courts. After her death, he was advanced by King James I. to the title of Lord Wotton, Baron of Morley, in Kent, and appointed Lord Lieutenant of that county (5).

Mr. Daniel Rogers, a very good and a very learned man, the friend and correspondent of that elegant scholar George Buchanan, was born in the parish of Aston, in the county of Warwick. When he was only thirteen years of age, he accompanied his father to Antwerp, in the reign of Queen Mary, to avoid the persecution, which then raged against the English Protestants with unabated virulence. He was the pupil of Melancthon, and perfectly understood the German, Dutch, and other foreign languages. On the demise of Mary, he returned into England, and being appointed secretary to an English embassy for many years, had frequent opportunites of communicating to Sir William

—— Cecil

(5) Camden's Annals. Three excellent letters from Sir Edward Wotton to "the "Lord Clifforde," are inserted in a work of great merit, "*Whitaker's* History and "Antiquities of the Deanery of Craven in the County of York." 4to. pp. 259. 260.

Digitized by Google

authentic information collected from Rome, from Venice, Paris, Brussels, and most of the principal cities of Europe concerning matters of great consequence to the interests of the reformed religion. He was ambassador to Denmark in 1588, and was frequently employed in negotiations abroad, always supporting the character of an able and upright statesman (6).

Mr Sidney, having determined to retire to Padua, a place of greater tranquillity than Venice, that he might pursue his studies with less interruption, the voice of friendship cautioned him to be upon his guard against the arts of adulation. He was continually exhorted not to persuade himself that he had reached the goal of excellence, but to be assured that it was his duty to dedicate his whole life to the attainment of solid glory (7).

The university of Padua, a city distinguished by the appellation of *learned*, still retained some degree of its ancient celebrity and splendour. In June 1574, he left Venice,

(6) At the end of Humphrey's life of Bishop Jewel are inserted several Latin and Greek verses on that learned and pious prelate, written by Mr. Daniel Rogers.

(7) Epist. ix.

Digitized by Google

Venice, and came to Padua. Here he applied himself with his accustomed diligence to geometry and astronomy. But he was advised by Languet not to advance far in those sciences. They required too great an exertion of his mental powers, and thus tended to debilitate his constitution, by consuming his vital and animal spirits. His health was naturally tender and delicate, and his disposition by no means cheerful. His venerable friend frequently admonishes him not to neglect his health, "lest he "should resemble a traveller, who during a long journey "attends to himself, but not to his horse (8)."

THE celebrated Tasso, who had already experienced many of those scenes of distress and danger, with which his life was chequered, was then resident at Padua: and there is little doubt, but that among other motives which induced Mr. Sidney to visit this seat of learning, this was not the least: a desire to partake of the conversation of this eminent poet. The ardour with which they met, may be more easily conceived than described. Both of them

glowing

(8) "Vide ne tantum temporis tribuas culturæ animi, ut valetudinem negligas, vel "etiam offendas; ne similis fias viatori, qui longo itinere dat quidem operam ut ipse "bene habeat, equi vero sui nullam rationem habet." *Ep.* xii.

Digitized by Google

glowing with all the fire of native genius, and equally emulous to excel in every thing honourable and virtuous, how fervent and truly affectionate must their friendship have been! The name of Tasso was known to the world by many of his excellent compositions. His poem entitled, "Rinaldo," was written by him when he was only eighteen years of age. It was one of the earliest productions of his muse, and was admired by all who had a taste for elegant literature, as "the first flower of a rare plant that promised "a future exuberance of beauty and fragrance." His "Amyntas" had been already published, and most of the cantos in the "Gierusalemme liberata," were in circulation in manuscript; and when Scipio Gentilis translated into Latin verse several cantos of this incomparable poem, he very properly inscribed them to Mr. Sidney, the friend of the poet, and the warm admirer of his extraordinary talents (9).

LANGUET

(9) Beni in his "Cavalianti ovvero dell' Anticrusca" says, that he himself knew Tasso personally in 1574, in the academy of the animosi in Padua, held in the palace of the Abbat Ascanio Martiningo. Geo. Vincenzo Pinelli, a wealthy Genoese and a studious and learned man, resided in the same year at Padua, and was the first of that family who laid the foundation of that extraordinary collection of books, which, a few years ago, was disposed of by the Pinelli family, and sold in London.

Digitized by Google

LANGUET was always studious to endear himself to our amiable countryman. He generously offered him the use of his purse, knowing that strangers resident in distant countries are not seldom embarrassed, and disappointed in their remittances, through the neglect of others. This offer was accepted, and Languet occasionally supplied him with money, requesting him not to be anxious about repaying it. He pointed out to him, with much earnestness, the benefits resulting from virtuous friendship. The possession of a true friend was represented to him as a treasure of inestimable value. He frequently urged him to acquire such a knowledge of the German language, as to enable him to understand what he read or heard. This language was however too rough and untractable for Mr. Sidney, who in vain attempted to surmount the difficulties of pronouncing it.—He could never utter a syllable of it with propriety.

MR. SIDNEY on his return to Venice, in February 1573, derived great pleasure and instruction from a free and undisguised converse on topics of learning with persons who professed the religion of the church of Rome. This circumstance gave rise to a suspicion among his friends in England, that he was inclined to become a member of that church. Nothing was more ungrounded than this suspi-

Digitized by Google

cion. Languet, with all the fidelity of an anxious preceptor, uniformly insisted on the excellency of the Protestant faith, and on the unceasing intrigues of the Roman Pontiff and his adherents, to effectuate the destruction of all heretics: and it was through his influence and advice that Mr. Sidney was dissuaded from visiting Rome, where his life would have been surrounded with a thousand dangers (1). Would not the purity of his moral and religious principles, which, in the language of his friend, was "whiter than snow," have been deeply contaminated by a residence in "the city seated on seven hills." To impress this truth on his mind Languet thus addresses him:

"It is difficult for a man clothed in white apparel to "remain in an apartment filled with smoke and dust, without

(1) "Satis memini quam sæpe mihi exprobraveris meâ culpâ accidisse ut Romanam "profectionem omiseris." *H. Langueti Epistola* lv.

It is not surprising that a young man, conversant in the best writers of Rome, and captivated with their beauties, should be desirous of treading on classic ground.—Though the experiment would have been hazardous, might it not have happened to him as it did to many others, that by seeing with his own eyes the abuses and corruptions that prevailed in the church of Rome, he might have become more confirmed in his own religious principles?

Digitized by Google

" out soiling his garment; nor can the complexion which
" has been long exposed to the sun, retain its native hue.
" Equally difficult it will be for you to preserve your mind
" pure and spotless, if you converse with the Italians; the
" inhabitants of Venice and Padua alone excepted, who
" have not yet entirely degenerated from the simplicity of
" those nations from which they deduce their origin."

AGAIN he urges the same point in the following apt similitude. " If a virtuous maid, overcome by the desire
" of visiting her friends and relatives, who are pent up in a
" besieged city, should venture in the night time to enter
" the enemy's camp, with the hope of eluding the guard;
" would you pronounce her deserving of praise, even if she
" succeeded in her attempt? By no means, I think; for to
" a virtuous woman no object should be so dear, as to
" cause her to endanger her chastity. Actions of this
" nature ought not to be judged from the event; nor will a
" wise man consider this woman as discreet and prudent,
" or choose her for a wife, because she had apparently so
" little regard for her virtue, when she exposed herself
" to an uncertain and precarious event. In the same
" manner, no one, who possesseth the true religion, will
" subject himself to hazard from men, who are most hostile

Digitized by Google

" to that religion, and who are prepared to destroy him, or " to convert him to their faith (2)."

MR. SIDNEY was now wholly immersed in study, and intent on the acquisition of science. He literally followed his father's admonition—" ever to be virtuously employed." Solicitous to form his Latin style, he requested the directions of Languet, who recommended to him a diligent perusal of Cicero's Epistles, not only for their superior elegance of language, but for the importance of the matter which they contain. From them, more than from any other records of antiquity, we learn the several causes which hastened the destruction of the Roman Republic.—He advised him to translate an epistle into another

language

(2) " Langueti epistola ad Sidneium xxxvi." Mr. Sidney held in detestation all those corruptions in doctrine and practice, which disgraced the church of Rome. The Bee-hive of the Romish Church, printed in 1580, " a worke of al good Catholikes too bee read, and most necessary to be understood," was dedicated to the wise and virtuous gentleman, Philip Sidney, Esquire. It is translated out of Dutch into English by Geo. Gilpin the elder.

To this ironical treatise belong two cuts, though rarely found in it: each of them representing the bee-hive by the Pope's triple crown, and the bees flying about it in different positions and attitudes, some with Cardinals hats on, others with mitres, the rest tonsured.

Digitized by Google

language, and having laid aside the version for some time, to render it again into Latin. He cautioned him against a fault which was then much in fashion—a superstitious affectation of emulating Cicero, and of admitting no words or phrases which were not Ciceronian. It is unnecessary to remark that Erasmus first exposed to ridicule the prepossessions of the Ciceronians, and that this attempt brought upon him the most bitter reproaches from Julius Cæsar Scaliger, as if he had been guilty of a deed equally atrocious with the crimes of sacrilege or parricide (3).

The works of Plutarch contain an invaluable treasury of useful learning. Mr. Sidney requested Languet to procure them for him at any price. The volumes, which were so scarce that it was extremely difficult to meet with them, were at length purchased. He read them with the avidity of a young student, who has no other object in view than to enlarge his sphere of intellectual improvement. He profited from them, by storing his mind with a vast fund of political, moral, critical, historical, and biographical knowledge. They were more particularly endeared to him

as

(3) See "Jortin's Life of Erasmus," Vol. I. p. 443. 456. "Mureti variæ lectiones." xv. 1.

Digitized by Google

as being printed in 1572 with his accustomed correctness by his most intimate friend Henry Stephens.

Of Aristotle he entertained a less favourable opinion; nor did Languet recommend to him the writings of that philosopher, whom he thought to be too concise and subtile, so as to appear obscure even to those who spent their whole time in reading his works.

Indeed the zeal, with which Languet consulted the improvement of his much esteemed friend, was uninterrupted. When Mr. Sidney made that noble declaration—that "next to the worship of the supreme Being, his chief "felicity consisted in cultivating a friendship with good "men," "Persevere in this sentiment," saith Languet, "it "is highly commendable, and you will never repent of it. "Nature has been so indulgent to you, that virtuous men "will be happy in your friendship. Prefer your own "countrymen to that distinction, but by no means exclude "those of other nations, if their merits entitle them to "your esteem."

It must have been in an unguarded hour, that this wise man so far forgot what was due to himself, and to the dig-

Digitized by Google

nity of his character, as to suggest a counsel, which, however necessary to be observed in the courts of princes, is surely inconsistent with that conduct, which is dictated by integrity and honour. To ingratiate himself with Cecil, the great and deserved favourite of Elizabeth, it is recommended to Mr. Sidney *to love, or to pretend to love* his children (4). It is added that Cecil was his friend, and capable of being very serviceable to him—that he was a cunning and experienced old man, who would soon discover the deception, unless it was managed with much skill and address. Are we then encouraged to assume the mask of hypocrisy, that we may more successfully accomplish our designs? Are we directed "to hide our dislike in "smiles, and under the garb of a courteous and affable "behaviour to conceal the real sentiments of our hearts?" How crooked is this policy! how odious is this deviation from the path of moral rectitude! how different from that lovely simplicity of manners, which detests every species of fraud, and enjoins the most perfect harmony between our words

(4) "Ubi in Angliam veneris, vide ut colas Cecilium, qui est tui amans, et tibi "reddit omnia familiaria. Nullâ autem re ejus benevolentiam magis demereri poteris, "quam si ejus liberos ames, aut *saltem simules te amare*. Verum memineris senem "astutum, et longo rerum usu edoctum facile deprehendere adolescentem simu-"lationis." *Languet. Epist.* xl.

Digitized by Google

words and our thoughts! We may venture to assert that Mr. Sidney was not inclined to observe this lesson of perverted wisdom. At least, his behaviour through life was candid and open, such as could result only from the most unsullied and genuine virtue.

THE general tenour of the advice which Languet gave to his son, (for he frequently addressed him in the language of a kind and affectionate father) was of a different complexion (5). That advice was worthy of a wise and good man (6). "To cultivate piety, to keep your faith inviolate, to speak the undisguised sentiments of your heart, to protect good men against unjust violence, and to prefer the safety of your country to life itself—these are the qualities more appropriated to your natural disposition, and to your birth, while the arts of dissimulation and flattery enervate the virtues and enslave the mind of men."

CAN

(5) He uses these tender appellations in his letters to him: "mi dulcissime fili"—"mi charissime Sidnæe"—"mi generose Sidnæe."

(6) "Colere pietatem, fidem servare, idem habere in ore et in pectore, tueri bonos adversus injustam vim, et patriæ salutem vitâ potiorem existimare."

Langueti. Epist. xxiii.

Digitized by Google

CAN we sufficiently admire and applaud the warmth and disinterested affection, with which he animated his young friend to the attainment of every thing praise-worthy? In one of his letters he thus writes. "Be not angry at the "liberty which I take. My great love to you extorts it "from me. Be assured that I set a due value upon your "illustrious descent, and those excellent gifts which nature "and fortune have liberally conferred upon you. But my "friendship respects only your extraordinary genius, your "love of virtue, and your distinguished probity. If I "should meet with a poor youth resembling you in the "purity of his morals and in his abilities, I should adopt "him as my son, and make him the heir of my pro-"perty. I shall think myself abundantly rewarded for my "friendship to you, if, before my death, I shall hear that "you are invested with dignity and authority; that you "are esteemed in your own country, and are in possession "of honours worthy of your virtue (7)."

DURING his abode at Heidelburg, he was particularly anxious to cultivate the friendship of Zacharias Ursinus.—This person, who from his infancy discovered an insatiable

avidity

(7) Langueti. Epist. vi.

Digitized by Google

avidity for learning, was educated at the university of Wirtemberg, where he applied himself to the languages, to poetry, philosophy, and divinity. That no interruption might be given to his studies, he caused the following inscription to be placed on the door of his library.

Amice, quisquis huc venis,
Aut agito paucis, aut abi.

His moral character was still more excellent than his literary one. He was all humility, attributing nothing to himself, and perfectly uncorrupted by avarice or ambition (8). From this eminent scholar Mr. Sidney learned to estimate the value of time: he learned how criminal it is to waste the hours of life in unedifying discourse, and much more so in vitious pursuits or guilty indulgencies. How pleasing must be the reflection to his affectionate parents, that their darling child was walking in that path of virtue which leads to happiness; that he was in the habits of friendly intercourse with one of the best and most learned men of the age in which he lived (9)!

Mr.

(8) Melchior Adam. Vitæ Theolog. Germanorum, p. 559.

(9) The character of this eminent man was not unknown to our English divines. Many of his Writings have been translated into the English language.

Digitized by Google

MR. SIDNEY, not satisfied with visiting different countries in Europe, was desirous of extending his plan, and actually formed a design of going to Constantinople. Languet, while he most earnestly dissuaded him from undertaking a journey to Rome, was less averse from this design. On this subject he writes with his usual tenderness. "Although "nothing is dearer to me than you are, and there is no one "for whom my fears are so great, yet my regard for you is "of such a nature, that if I saw you from any imbecility of "mind omitting what would strengthen you in virtue, "no person would more severely reprehend you. A "voyage to Constantinople with regard to the dangers and "inconveniences to which you must be exposed, and "the difficulties and labours which you must sustain, is far "more arduous than a journey to Rome. But if you "should determine to undertake it, I would not earnestly "endeavour to discourage you. For in this journey "you would incur no hazard, as in one to Rome, of losing "your religion, your conscience, your reputation, than "which nothing should be dearer to you. If you should "fall into the hands of those robbers who live at Rome, "you must either renounce the religion which you profess, "or expose your life to extreme danger. It would be "altogether impossible for you entirely to escape them: for

Digitized by Google

"although you might not have reason to be afraid of the "treachery of those who pretend to be your friends, yet "the dignity of your aspect would cause many to be "inquisitive concerning you. If you should have the "slightest attack of a fever, your host or your physician "would give information to the parish priest, for they are "expressly commanded to do so. What mighty advantage "would accrue to you from inspecting for a few days, the "ruins of Rome, merely to boast that you had seen "them? God has granted to you, more than to any one "I know, an energy of genius, not for the purpose of "abusing it by examining vain objects to your great "danger, but of employing it for the advantage of your "country and of all good men. You are only the steward, "as it were, of your noble talents, and by the abuse of "them you offend against that Being who has conferred "such a blessing upon you (1)."

In a subsequent letter he has in strong and lively colours depicted the manners and character of the Italians (2).

"I am

(1) Ep. xxxii. Vienna, June 11, 1574.

(2) When Mr. Sidney was at Genoa, his friend was alarmed, lest he should be corrupted by the conversation of the Genoese: men, so artful and cunning, that all the other Italians were afraid of them. *Languети. Ep.* xxii.

Digitized by Google

" I am unwilling to dissemble with you. I do not admire
" the wisdom of the Italians so much as to consider all
" their sayings as oracles: nor do I approve the reasoning
" of those men who believe that they regulate their lives
" properly, if they approach as near as possible to the
" manners of the Italians. Whatever nations have in
" my memory followed their counsels in the administration
" of their government, they have involved their country
" in the most dire calamities. Of their wickedness I say
" nothing. Are not those persons most commended in
" Italy, who know how to dissemble, how to flatter, and
" how to insinuate themselves by any means into the
" favour of men in power, and to accommodate themselves
" to the passions of such men, so as to consider as sacred
" whatever is suggested to them by the violent resentment
" of him whom they have once resolved to serve, and to
" contend for it, as for every thing most precious to them?
" Nay, their minds are so broken and subdued by a long
" servitude, that they willingly endure indignities and
" reproaches, if they are not deprived of their money, and
" their infamous pleasures: and they think that they are
" very fortunate, if he, on whose nod they depend, should
" condescend to look upon them without deigning to
" speak. As to myself, I am persuaded that nothing is

Digitized by Google

" more pernicious to ingenuous minds, than those arts " which weaken their manly virtue, and prepare them " for slavery; for the Italians themselves know, by woeful " experience, that slavery is the reward of those arts. Is " it not more suitable to your disposition, and to your " noble birth, to cultivate piety, to preserve your faith " inviolate, to speak the sentiments of your heart without " disguise, to defend good men against injustice, and to " prefer the safety of your country to life itself? Since " these qualities are learned more easily in Germany than " in Italy, I have endeavoured to recall you to this place, " not so much to learn, as to cultivate and improve them, " for they are already implanted in you by nature (3)."

THESE arguments produced their due effect upon his virtuous mind, and though his own inclinations and the influence of many of his countrymen urged him to go to Rome, he desisted from his design. He seems however to have regretted in a later period of his life, that he had acquiesced in the admonitions of his friend in this matter.

---

(3) Ep. xxxiii. Vienna, June 18, 1574.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. III.

FROM MR. SIDNEY'S RETURN INTO ENGLAND IN 1575, TO HIS RETURN FROM HIS EMBASSY INTO GERMANY IN 1577.

HAVING spent almost three years in visiting different parts of Europe, Mr. Sidney returned through Germany by Heidelburg, Frankfort (4), and Antwerp, and arrived in England in the month of May, 1575. To his attainments of Grecian and Latin literature, he had now added a

——— know-

(4) He was at Frankfort in 1573.

"To his very frende Mr. William Blunt, Mr. of the Counter in Wood-streete.

"*Laus Deo.*—In Frankefurt, the 20th of Marche, 1573.

"On the last day of May next coming, I praye you pay by this my first bill of ex-
"change, my second not being payed before, unto Reynolds Drelinge or the bringer
"hereof, one hundreth and twenty pounds sterling money current for merchandise:
"and is for the valew here in Frankfort by me received of Christian Rolgin for myne
"own use. At the day faile not, but make good payment. And so God kepe you.

"Your loving frende,

M.S. "PHILIP SIDNEY."

Digitized by Google

knowledge of the French, Spanish, and Italian languages. On his return he became the delight and admiration of the English court, by his dignified and majestical address, the urbanity of his manners, and the sweet complacency of his whole deportment. The Queen treated him with peculiar kindness, calling him "her Philip," in opposition, it is said, to Philip of Spain, her sister's husband. To obtain the approbation of a wise prince, even in lesser matters, is an honour which no prudent man will undervalue (5). In the quaint language of Fuller, "His "homebred abilities Travel perfected, and a sweet Nature "set a Gloss upon both. He was so essential to the "English court, that it seemed maimed without his "Company, being a compleat Master of Matter and "Language."

A retrospective view of the manner, in which he had employed his time while he was abroad, must have afforded to him real and heart-felt satisfaction. How grateful must it have been to him to recollect his diligence, his temperance, his docility, his rapid progress in learning, his attention to the advice of his parents and superiors in wisdom;

(5) "Gravissimi principis judicium in minoribus etiam rebus consequi pulchrum "est." *Plin.*

Digitized by Google

wisdom; and, lastly, his friendship with men older and more wise than himself! It is reasonable to suppose that a conduct so virtuous, would have extorted commendation even from those, who "having led a very dissipated life, "in all the hurry of the world and pleasure, scarce ever "read, except at the conclusion of a day spent in vain "and frivolous occupations (6)."

In a letter dated on the Ides of August, 1575, Languet most cordially congratulates Mr. Sidney on his return into his native country. Anxiously solicitous for his further improvement, he writes: "I am sorry that I altogether "subject myself to ridicule, when I entreat you not "wholly to omit your cultivation of the Latin language "amidst the tumults of a court, and the many occasions "that occur of an useless waste of time. But because your "letter affords a proof of the great progress which you "have made in that language, and how well you can "write in it, when you are willing to exercise your "genius; if you entirely relinquish the study of it, I shall "scarcely forbear objecting it to you, as proceeding from "an enervated mind, and from the love of leisure. See

what

(6) Thus Lord Orford writes of himself in a letter now before me.

Digitized by Google

" what a return I make to you for your most acceptable
" letter, by endeavouring to persuade you to pursue those
" objects, which when men of your elevated rank propose
" to themselves, they seem to many to want common
" sense. But I shall not trouble you with my trifles (7)."

The curiosity of the English traveller often impels him to survey those venerable scenes of ancient grandeur, in which the nobles of the land displayed their taste for magnificence. His mind is then seized with awe: he presents to his imagination the princely triumphs, the manly sports of former ages, the joyful train of attendants, the gay minstrelsy that charmed the ear,

" And pomp, and feast, and revelry,
" With masque, and antique pageantry."

Such once was Kennelworth Castle, in the County of Warwick; the seat of the Earl of Leicester, where he entertained the Queen and the whole court for seventeen days (8). Mr. Sidney could not be an indifferent spectator

of

(7) Epist. xlv.

(8) George Gascoigne, a poet who flourished at this time, published a relation of this entertainment of Queen Elizabeth, in a masque written in verse and prose, under the title of " Princely pleasures at Kenelworth Castle." This tract is reprinted in the first volume of " Queen Elizabeth's Progresses, &c." London, 1788.

Digitized by Google

of those splendid and elegant exhibitions with which the royal guest was gratified. He himself contributed to her amusement at another time, when she honoured this his noble relative with her presence at his house in Wanstead in Essex, by composing a masque entitled "The "Lady of May," which was performed before her. In this dramatic composition he hath not forborn to discover his proficiency in the school of courtly adulation, by the frequent allusions he has made to her beauty. It is well known that the poet's song and the orator's eloquence were not unacceptable to her, when they conveyed an encomium upon her personal charms (9).

SIR HENRY SIDNEY was not one and twenty years old when he was chosen ambassador to King Henry H. of France. His son did not much exceed that age when he was sent abroad in a public capacity. To an ambitious young man,—and all young men should be under the

impulse

(9) Lady Rich, the sister of Robert Earl of Essex, was not ignorant of this foible of her royal mistress, when, supplicating for her brother's life, she speaks of "her Ma- "jesty's *beauty*—of her brother's service to her *beauty;*" and remarks that her excellent *beauties* and perfections should feel more compassion—though she had then passed her grand climacteric. *Sidney Papers*

Digitized by Google

impulse of virtuous ambition,—no appointment could be more desirable than that of Ambassador to the Court of Vienna in 1576, to condole with the Emperor Rodolph, on the demise of his father Maximilian the second (1), whose virtuous character reflected the brightest lustre on the crown which he wore. This young prince was possessed of many valuable qualities: in his disposition mild and humane, a lover and patron of arts and sciences, moderate in his principles with respect to religion, though frequently

seduced

(1) He died Oct. 12, 1576. When his physicians apprized him of the near approach of death, he said, "I am perfectly sensible that my hour is come, and I thank "God for delivering me from the tortures I have suffered." His sister, the Electress of Bavaria, then asked him, "whether he chose to confess his sins to a Priest, and to "receive the sacrament?" He replied, "I have confessed to that Priest who is in "heaven, and on your account I am unwilling to receive the sacrament again:" which was considered by those who were present, as if he was unwilling to receive it in both kinds, lest he should offend his wife and sister—as if he thought it impious to receive it only in one kind, and therefore that it was better to decline it. He afterward took leave of his wife, and said, that death was ungrateful to him for no other reason, than that the education of his children was not finished. A little before his death, his sister told him, that the bishop who constantly preached before him, was at the door: "Was he willing to admit him?" He replied harshly, that he might be admitted, on condition that he mentioned to him only the merits of Christ. This condition was observed by the bishop, whom when he had heard for some time, reclining on his left side, he quickly expired, as if he had fallen asleep.

Epistolarum II. Languети ad Augustum Saxoniæ ducem, &c. L. 1. p. 241.

Digitized by Google

seduced from them by the artifices of bigots and Jesuits (2). The pompous retinue of Mr. Sidney's attendants was suitable to the dignity of his employment, and the honour of his sovereign. He assumed a generous pride, as well from a consciousness of his own merit, as from his noble parentage. A tablet, bearing the arms of his family (3), was fixed on the fronts of the different houses where he incidentally abode in the towns through which he travelled. On this tablet an inscription was engraven, denoting his illustrious descent, and the honourable office which he then filled (4). The Queen's own penetration and discernment had promoted him to this appointment.—It is remarked of this princess, that in the choice of her ambassadors she had a regard not only to the talents

and

(2) See Birch's Memoirs of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth, Vol. 1. p. 3.

(3) Or, a Phaon's head azure. Crest. Or, a wreath, a bear sustaining a ragged staff, argent; his muzzle sable, and his plain collar and chain Or. Sometimes, on a wreath a porcupine azure, his quills, collar, and chain Or.

(4) The following inscription was engraven on the tablet.

Illustrissimi et generosissimi viri
Philippi Sidnæi Angli
Pro-regis Hiberniæ filii, comitum Warwici
Et Leicestriæ nepotis, serenissimæ
Reginæ Angliæ ad Cæsarem legati.

Digitized by Google

and abilities, but even to the figure and person of those to whom she consigned the administration of her affairs abroad. Nor can we blame this trait of her character. "A virtuous mind in a fair body, is indeed a fine picture "in a good light (5)."

THE purport of this embassy was not confined to the imperial court; it was not the mere ceremonial act of congratulating the new Emperor. It had a more important and a more laudable object in view: the union of all the Protestant states in the defence of their common religion against the ruin that menaced them from the Popish powers, from the superstition of Rome, and the tyranny of Spain (6). He succeeded in this attempt: he

(5) This predilection of the Queen in favour of exterior accomplishments, was observable in her appointment of Sir Christopher Hatton to the office of Lord Chancellor, on account of his graceful person and fine dancing. Yet his intellectual accomplishments were by no means superficial. He discharged his high office with applause; yet, distrusting his own legal abilities, he was always assisted by two lawyers.

(6) The cruelties of the Spaniards in the Low Countries drew upon them the most dreadful enemies in 1574, and particularly the seamen of Zealand. The latter undertook to relieve Leyden when it was besieged. They wore a crescent upon their hats, with this inscription: "Rather Turks than Papists:" thus intimating, that the Turks had more humanity than the Catholics. *Pran.'t's abridged History, &c. p.* 164.

Digitized by Google

he awakened their fears, convinced their judgment, and impressed upon their minds a due sense of the necessity of exerting the most vigorous efforts, by entering into an association which originated from the best and purest motives. Hence they were induced to conclude a religious league with England, with that country which was then justly acknowledged to be the firm support, the invincible bulwark, of the reformation.

He was directed at the same time to visit the court of John Casimir, Count Palatine of the Rhine. On this occasion Lord Leicester, in an elegant Latin epistle to that prince, recommended his nephew, as desirous of being received into a more intimate friendship with his highness, for whose character and attention to the interests of true religion he professes the greatest respect, whilst he makes a tender of his services and assistance, whenever they may be required.

Frederick III. the Elector Palatine, died on the fourteenth day of October, 1576, two days after the demise of Maximilian. He is represented by Gerard Brandt, as a prince endowed with great virtues. He had given the strongest proofs of his attention to the cause of the reforma-

Digitized by Google

tion, by liberally assisting the oppressed Protestants of France and the Low Countries. Mr. Sidney's uniform zeal for the welfare of the reformed religion did not permit him to decline his attendance on the electoral court, or to neglect the opportunity of executing another commission, by demanding the sums of money which had been advanced by his royal mistress towards the expense of carrying on a war with France. The English ambassador, of whom it was said, that "from a child he started into "a man, without ever being a youth," conducted himself in the management of these matters with all the sagacity and discretion of an able and experienced statesman. Lord Burleigh himself, who was not always friendly to the connexions of the Earl of Leicester, very cheerfully pronounced the most flattering eulogy on his industry and judgment, which could not have been exceeded by the wisdom of maturer years, or the exertions of a more enlarged experience.

Of his introduction into the imperial court, and of his reception there, he has given a correct narrative in an official letter to Walsingham, who was then secretary of state. He had his first audience on Easter-Monday, when, in obedience to the Queen's command, he made known

Digitized by Google

unto the Emperor, how greatly her Majesty was grieved at the loss of so worthy a prince as his father was, the fruits of whose wisdom appeared both in maintaining the empire, and preventing the invasion of the Turks. He farther expressed her Majesty's good hope of him, that he would second his father in his virtues, and in the manner of his government: he urged her advice to him, to avoid the turbulent counsels which arose from the indulgence of private passion. The Emperor answered in Latin in very few words, declaring his grateful sense of the Queen's attention, and his resolution to imitate his father. "The next day,"—they are Mr. Sidney's own words,—"I delivered her "Majesty's letter to the Empress, with the singular signifi- "cation of her Majestie's great good will unto her, and her "Majestie's request of her to advise her son to a wyse and "peaceable governmente. Of the Emperor deceased I "used but few wordes, because in troth I saw it bredd "some troble unto her, to hear him mentioned in that "kinde. She answered me with many courteouse speeches, "and greate acknowledging of her own beholdingnesse to "her Majestie. And for her son, she said, she hoped he "wolde do well, but that for her own parte, she said, she "had given herselfe from the world, and woolde not "greatly sturr from thence forward in it. Then did I

Digitized by Google

" deliver the Queen of Fraunce's letter, she standing by the " Empresse, using such speeches as I thought were fitt for " her double sorrow, and her Majestie's good will unto her, " confirmed by her wise and noble governynge of herselfe " in the tyme of her being in Fraunce (7). Her answer " was full of humbleness, but she spake so low, that I " coulde not understande many of her wordes. From them " I went to the yonge princes, and paste of each syde cer- " taine complimentes, which I will leave, because I feare " me I have allreddy bene overlonge there. The rest of " the daies that I lay there, I informed myself as well as I " coolde of such particularities as I received in my instruc- " tions; as 1. Of the Emperor's disposition; and his " brethren. 2. By whose advice he is directed. 3. When " it is likely he should marry. 4. What princes in " Jermany are most affected to him. 5. In what state he " is left for revenews. 6. What good agremente there is " betwixt him and his brethren. 7. And what partage " they have. In these thinges I shall at my returne more " largely be hable and with more leysure to declare it. " Now only this much I will troble you withe, that

" the

(7) The lady Isabella, second daughter of the Emperor Maximilian, was married to Charles IX. King of France, in 1570. She now experienced a double pressure of affliction, from the recent deaths of her father and her husband.

Digitized by Google

" the Emperor is holy (8) by his inclination given to the " warres, few of wordes, sullain of disposition, very secrete " and resolute, nothinge the manners his father had in " winninge men in his behaviour, but yet constant in " keeping them; and such a one, as, though he promise " not much outwardly, but, as the Latins say, *aliquid in* " *recessu:* his brother Earnest much lyke him in disposition, " but, that he is more franke, and forward, which per- " chaunce the necessity of his fortune argues him to be: " both extremely spaniolated."

He came to Heidelburg, the metropolis of the Electorate and Palatinate of the Rhine, on the last day of April, and had an audience the next day. He writes,—" I had from " her Majestie to condole with the Elector, and to perswade " him to unite with his brother. He made his Vice- " chancelour to answere me, which he did in a very longe " speeche withe thankes to her Majestie, and prayses of the " worthy prince that is dead: the pointe of concorde with " his brother he thanked her Majestie for remenberinge, " and fell into a common place of the necessite of brother's " love, but descended nothinge into his own particularitie,

" or

(8) Wholly.

Digitized by Google

" or what he thought of him. One thing I was tolde to
" add in my speeche, to desyre him in her Majestie's
" name, to have mercyfull consideration of the church of
" the religion so notably established by his father, as in
" all Jermany, there is not such a number of excellente
" learned men, and truly woolde rue (9) any man to see
" the desolation of them. I laide before him, as wel
" as I coolde, the dangers of the mightiest princes of
" Christendom, by entering into lyke violent changes—the
" wronge he should doe his worthy father, utterly to abolish
" that he had instituted, and so, as it were, condemne him,
" besydes the example he shoolde give his posterity to
" handle him the like. This I emboldened myself to
" doe, seeing, as methought, great cause for it, either
" to move him at least to have some regarde for her
" Majestie's sake, or, if that followed not, yet to leave
" the publicke testimony with the church of Jermany,
" that her Majestie was careful of them; besydes that I
" learned Prince Casimir had used her Majestie's authoritie
" in perswadinge his brother from it. This I hope will
" be taken for sufficient cause therein of my boldness.
" My answere was at first so longe, as Mr. Vice-chancelour

" stode

(9) " It would rue"—A common ellipsis in our old English authors.

Digitized by Google

" stode by. After I had another interpretour, he made " me this answere, that for her Majestie's sake he woolde " doe much. He mislyked not of the men, but must be " constrained to doe as the other princes of the empyre. " In the mean time he is gone to the bathes for the last " remedy of his infirmity (1)."

WILLIAM, Prince of Orange, the father of his country, the protector of its liberties and its laws, seems to have been designated by the hand of Providence, as the guardian of the confederated provinces of the Low Countries. In the opinion of Languet " there was not a more excellent " man in all Christendom (2)." In his dress he was remark-

(1) From a letter of Mr. Philip Sidney to Secretary Walsingham, dated at Heidelburg, May 3, 1576, among the Cottonian MSS. in the British Museum, *Galba, B.* xi. 363.

Of this embassy Mr. Alexander Nevile thus speaks in his eulogy on Sidney, addressed to the Earl of Leicester.—" Denique adolescens immo pæne puer, quâ " ætate alii vix fari incipiunt pro regiâ majestate ad Imperatoriam honorificâ legatione " functus es. Atque ita functus, ut non solum eorum et oculos et animos qui te " viderant divini ingenii admiratione perstrinxeris, verum etiam ad diuturnam " illius temporis memoriam nominis tui famam propagaveris."

(2) Cole, obsecro, amicitiam cum eo, et præsta ei quæ poteris officia: ego enim judico non esse præstantiorem virum in orbe Christiano.

Langueti Epistola lxxiv, Among

Digitized by Google

remarkably plain and simple, temperate in his life, and by no means likely to be dazzled by false splendour, or fascinated by counterfeit virtue. A strenuous advocate of civil and religious liberty, he extended his indulgence and protection with an impartial hand, to the Romanists, the Anabaptists, and the Lutherans. When he was at one time reduced to the last extremity, he avowed his resolution to overflow the whole country by destroying the dikes, and to embark the men, women, and children, who were willing to accompany him, that he might secure to them the possession of freedom in some happier clime. A brighter scene opened to his view, and he desisted from this design. After a life spent in the practice of virtue and the pursuit of solid glory, he fell a victim to the impious fury of a fanatic assassin, whom the artifices of the Jesuits and Catholic priests had instigated to the deed, by ensuring to him a seat among the blessed

martyrs,

Among the guests which take their seats at the table of modern fame, as described by Dr. Akenside, William the first prince of Orange, is distinguished as one, whose name must be venerable on earth, as long as public virtue is remembered among men. Nothing can place his character in a more pleasing point of view, than his famous Apology, written in reply to the proscription of him by the king of Spain. It is printed in the Phœnix, Vol. I. p. 530; and an elegant abridgment of it is inserted in Watson's History of the Reign of Philip II.

Digitized by Google

martyrs, if he died in the execution of his plot. The last words of this prince were worthy of him. "O God, have "mercy on me and this afflicted people. I am grievously "wounded."

WHAT could be more glorious to Mr. Sidney, who had not yet attained the twenty-fifth year of his age, than the exalted friendship, the cordial attachment of this truly good and magnanimous prince? He usually called him "his "master;" and emphatically described him, as "one of the "ripest and greatest counsellors of state at that day in "Europe (2)." He took him as it were into his bosom: their hearts were knit together by the strongest ties of reciprocal esteem. They held a constant correspondence with each other, not on trifling and frivolous topics, but on the political transactions of the age in which they lived, on the state of public affairs in England, France, Germany, Italy, the Low Countries, and Spain. These letters, if they

were

(2) Pindar's character of Demophilus is truly applicable to Mr. Sidney at this time:

Καινος γαρ εν παισι νεος,
Εν δε βελταις πρεσβυς— *Pyth.* iv.

Digitized by Google

were now in existence, would, no doubt, afford a full and decided testimony of the vastly improved abilities of these two incomparable persons.

A more singular instance of respect to the worth of Mr. Sidney occurred in the person of Don John of Austria, the natural son of the Emperor Charles V. and Viceroy of Philip II. King of Spain, in the Netherlands. Though he resembled his father in the elegance and beauty of his person, in the affability of his manners, and in his love of arms, he did not preserve himself from that imputation of inhumanity and implacable revenge, which in that age characterized a Spaniard. Having obtained a great military reputation by his success against the Turks at the famous battle of Lepanto (3), on the seventh day of October, 1571, he aspired to an equal share of glory in his attempt to destroy the Huguenots. On his banner floated a cross with an inscription, that expressed a determined resolution to extirpate the Protestant faith. He had always

approved

(3) In this battle Michael de Cervantes Saavedra fought in the ranks, as a private soldier, and had the misfortune, or rather, as he thought, the honour to lose his left hand.

Digitized by Google

approved himself as an obedient servant, ready to execute implicitly the commands of a sovereign, who was not ashamed of declaring openly " that he had much rather be " no king at all, than have heretics for his subjects (4)."— Nothing could be more discordant than this man, and the English ambassador. At first he looked with contempt on his youth, and with all the insolence of national pride scarcely deemed him worthy of his notice. Yet such are the charms of intrinsic merit, so attractive the beauty of genuine excellence, that we find the haughty and imperious Spaniard struck, as it were, with reverential awe at the view of pre-eminent goodness, and contributing a just though involuntary applause to the fine talents and high endowments of our amiable countryman.

THE prudence and judgment, the dexterity and address, displayed by Mr. Sidney in his embassy, and the celebrity which he had obtained in foreign courts, entitled him to every mark of royal compensation. His services were graciously accepted, though he was rewarded with no office or employment in the state. Nor could any intelligence be

more

(4) " Che gli voleva piu tosto restar senza regni, che possider gli con heresia."
Bentivoglio.

Digitized by Google

more pleasing to his father, than that which was communicated by Sir Francis Walsingham. " Now touching your " Lordship's particular, I am to impart unto you the " return of the young gentleman, your sonne, whose mes- " sage verie sufficientlie performed, and the relatinge " thereof, is no less gratefullye received, and well liked of " her Majestie, then the honorable opinion he hathe left " behinde him with all the princes with whome he had to " negotiate, hathe left a most sweet savor and grateful " remembraunce of his name in those parts. The gentle- " man hath given no small arguments of great hope, the " fruits whereof I doubt not your Lordship shall reape, as " the benefitt of the good parts which are in him, and " whereof he hath given some tast in this voyage, is to re- " dounde to more then your Lordship and himself. There " hathe not ben any gentleman, I am sure, these many " yeres, that hathe gon throughe so honorable a charge " with as great commendacions as he: In consideration " whereof, I could not but communicate this part of " my joy with your Lordship, being no less refreshinge " unto me in these my troublesome business, then the soile " is to the chased stagge. And so wishinge the increase of " his good parts to your Lordship's comfort, and the service " of her Majestie and his countrie, I humblie take my

Digitized by Google

" leave. From the court at Greenwich this xth of " June 1577.

" Your Lordship's assured friend,

" FRANCIS WALSYNGHAM (5)."

WHEN it is known with what diligence, attention, and wisdom, he discharged the functions of this embassy, it is difficult to explain the causes, which prevented his advancement in the court of Elizabeth. If the interest and influence of powerful families had been necessary to facilitate his promotion, nothing could be more splendid than the alliances of his house. His maternal relations were among the first of the nobility. Of the four sisters of his father, Frances was the wife of Thomas Ratcliffe Earl of Sussex; and Anne was married to Sir William Fitzwilliam, who was three several times Lord Deputy of Ireland, and five times one of the Lords Justices of that kingdom: " a sufficient " evidence of his honesty and ability, Queen Elizabeth " never trusting twice, when she was once deceived in a " minister of state(6)."

AMONG

(5) Sidney Papers, Vol. 1. p. 193.

(6) He was constable of Fotheringay castle in Northamptonshire, where he treated Mary Queen of Scots, when a prisoner, with so much attention and kindness, that on the morning of the day on which she was beheaded, she presented him with a picture of her son King James, which picture is yet extant. *Collins's Peerage.*

Digitized by Google

AMONG the magnificent presents with which he was honoured while he was abroad, are particularly mentioned a gold chain which the Emperor Rodolphus (7) gave him, and another with a jewel, which he received from the princess of Orange.

---

(7) The Emperor Rodolphus II. began his reign with great advantages. But his fame was soon tarnished by a conduct which proved him altogether unfit for governing his dominions either in peace or war. His chief attention was engrossed by the sciences, and particularly by the study of mechanics: to which he was so much addicted, that he spent whole days in the shops of clock-makers and turners. His palace was filled with chymists, and one of his principal amusements consisted in making chymical experiments. He passed many hours in the stables among his horses, and often went thither in the dress of a groom to avoid the eyes of the public. These occupations, so unbecoming the imperial dignity, inspired his enemies with a contempt of his character. *See Mod. Univ. Hist. Vol.* xi. *p.* 184.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. IV.

FROM MR. SIDNEY'S RETURN FROM HIS EMBASSY INTO GERMANY IN 1577, TO HIS APPOINTMENT TO THE GOVERNMENT OF FLUSHING IN THE NETHERLANDS IN 1585.

HENRY LORD HERBERT, eldest son to William Earl of Pembroke, on the repudiation of his first wife, Lady Catharine Grey, (8) sister to Lady Jane Grey, married Anne the daughter of George Earl of Shrewsbury. On her

demise

(8) The very night before Lady Jane Grey suffered death, she addressed the following exhortation to this her beloved sister in a letter written at the end of a Greek Testament. "I have here sent you, good sister Katherine, a book which, though it be "not outwardly trimmed with gold, yet inwardly it is more worth than precious "stones. It is the book, dear sister, of the law of the Lord: it is his Testament and "last will, which he bequeathed unto us wretches; which shall lead you to the path "of eternal life." *See Progresses of Queen Elizabeth, Vol. ii.*

Digitized by Google

demise without issue, having succeeded to the Earldom of his father, he married in the beginning of the year 1576, Mary the only surviving sister of Mr. Philip Sidney. The first proposal of this marriage was most cordially embraced by her father, who in a letter to the Earl of Leicester, his brother-in-law, speaks of his own mean "lineage and kin;" and attributes the great honour of the proposed connexion to his match in the noble house of Dudley, and for which he acknowledgeth himself bound to honour and serve the same to the uttermost of his power. "I have," says he, "so joyfully at heart this happy advancement of my child, "that I would lye a year in close prison, rather than it "should break. But alas! my derest Lord, myne abylyte "answereth not my harty desyer. I am poor; myne estate, "as well in lyvelod and moveable, is not unknown to your "Lordshyp, whych wantyth mutch to make me able to "equall that, whych I know my Lord of Pembrook may "have. Twoo thousand l. I confes I have bequethed her, "which your Lordshyp knowyth I myght better spare her "whan I wear dead, than one thousand lyvyng; and in "troth, my Lord, I have yt not; but borow yt I must, and "so I wyll: and, if your Lordshypp wyll get me leave, "that I may feede my eyes with that joyfull syght of their "couplying, I will give her a cup worth fyve hundryth l.—

Digitized by Google

" Good, my Lord, bear wyth my poverty; for, if I had it,
" lyttell would I regard any sum of money, but wyllyngly
" would gyve it, protestyng before the almyghty God, that
" if he and all the powers on earth would geve me my
" choyse for a husband for her, I would choose the Earl of
" Pembrooke."

It is impossible not to lament the situation of this great and upright man, who found himself unable to advance a sufficient portion to his accomplished daughter. The annals of the reign of Elizabeth present us with too many instances of genuine virtue drooping under the shade of neglect, and unrewarded with those lucrative honours and compensations which are due to superior worth.

The generosity of Leicester removed every obstacle.—The wisdom, the goodness, and beauty of the Countess of Pembroke are happily consecrated to the praises of latest posterity, by the grateful muse of Ben Jonson (9).

In

(9) In the well-known epitaph, beginning with these lines:

Underneath this marble hearse
Lyes the subject of all verse,
Sidney's sister———.

Mr. Addison

Digitized by Google

In 1577 Sir Henry Sidney was under the necessity of contending with the violence of powerful adversaries in his government of Ireland. The conduct of the Lord Deputy with regard to a tax imposed upon the English pale, was represented to the Queen in so unfavourable a light, as to excite her resentment. At this critical juncture he found a zealous and faithful advocate in his son. Mr. Sidney, having

Mr Addison attributes this beautiful composition to an uncertain author. Many of our poets have celebrated this lady.

PEMBROKE, a pearl that orient is of kind,
A Sidney right, shall not in silence sit,
A gem more worth than all the gold of Ind,
For she enjoys the wise Minerva's wit,
And sets to school our poets every where,
That doth presume the laurel crown to weare,
The Muses nine and all the Graces three
In PEMBROKE'S books and verses you shall see.

" A pleasant conceite," by Thomas Churchyard.

Urania sister unto Astrofell,
In whose brave mind, as in a golden coffer,
All heavenly gifts and riches locked are,
More rich than pearls of Ind or gold of Ophir,
And in her sex more wonderful and rare.

Spenser's " Colin Clout's come home again."

Her own poet thus writes of her version of the psalms.

By this, great lady, thou must then be known,
When WILTON lies low levell'd in the ground,

And

Digitized by Google

ing collected all the articles of accusation that were invidiously objected to him, completely demonstrated the falsehood of them. Of this attempt to vindicate the injured fame of his father, Mr. Edward Waterhouse thus writes (1). "Let no man compare with Mr. Philip's pen. I know he "will send his discourse to your Lordship, and, when you "read it, you shall have more cause to pray God for him, "than impute affection to me in this my opinion of "him (2)." The honour and integrity of Sir Henry Sidney, thus ably defended by his son, rendered him

superior

And this is that which thou may'st call thy own,
Which sacrilegious time cannot confound;
Here thou surviv'st thyself, here thou art found
Of late succeeding ages, fresh in fame,
Where in eternal brass remains thy name.

Daniel's poetical Works. Vol. 1. *p.* 256.

Besides the above version, in allusion to which she is pourtrayed in one of her pictures with a Bible in her hand, she translated, "A Discourse of Life and Death, written in "French, by Philip Mornay, London, 1600, 4to." She is also classed among our dramatic poets, having published "the tragedie of Antonie, done into English. London "1590, and 1595, 4to." "A dialogue between two shepherds in praise of Astræa," written by Lady Pembroke, is printed in "Davison's Poetical Rapsodie, 1602."

(1) Letter to Sir Henry Sidney, in the Sidney Papers. Vol. 1. p. 228.

(2) Letter to Sir Henry Sidney from his secretary, in the Sidney Papers.

Digitized by Google

superior to the artful attacks of his enemies. He was firmly re-instated in the Queen's favour, with the approbation and applause of all good men (3).

THE natural fervency of his temper, animated by his eagerness to defend his father's conduct, had almost involved Mr. Sidney in an open quarrel with Thomas, Earl of Ormond, who was not only a relation of the Queen, but highly esteemed by her. This circumstance we learn from a letter written by Mr. Waterhouse to Sir Henry Sidney, and dated from Oatlands on the sixteenth day of September, 1577 (4). "Some litell occasions of discourtesies have "passed between the Erle of Ormond, and Mr. Philip "Sidney, because the Erle spoke unto him and he "answered not, but was in dead silence on purpose, "because he imputeth unto the Erle such practices as have "been made to alienate her Majesty's mind from your "Lordship. But the controversies are, I think, at the

"fardest;

(3) The tax so vehemently opposed, was an ancient tax, and consisted in an exaction of victuals at a certain rate for the family of the Lord Deputy, and for the soldiers in garrison. The Queen commanded it to be levied with moderation. "She would "have her subjects shorn, but not devoured."

(4) Sidney Papers, Vol. 1. p. 227.

Digitized by Google

" fardest; for the expectation of my Lord Chancellor's " coming hath put all Irish causes to silence, till he be " herde; and the Erle of Ormond saith he will accept no " quarrel from a gentleman that is bound by nature to " defend his father's cause, and who is otherwise furnished " with so many vertues as he knows Mr. Philip to be. " And on the other side, Mr. Philip has gone so farr, and " shewed as much magnanimity as is convenient, unless he " could charge him with any particularities, which I " perceive he yet cannot, other then with a general defense " of the countree ways, wherein all the nation here, as I " think, be culpable, saving the Lord of Dousany, who, for " ought that I hear, hath not meddled in the matter, and " will not." While the steady silence of Mr. Sidney cannot subject him to any very great degree of censure, much praise is due to the noble Earl, who thus generously acknowledges and admires the virtues of an amiable young man. It must not be concealed, that the Earl of Ormond was under repeated obligations to the Lord Deputy of Ireland, who never gave him any cause for discontentment. " What he hath desired at my hands," (they are the words of Sir Henry Sidney himself,) " that I could do, he hath " had it; he never asked me pardon for any that I denied " him; he never desired me to stay pardon from any that

Digitized by Google

" I have refused him. Those that he recommended to " offices of charge I have accepted and placed; those he " would have discharged, I have displaced, and all other " tokens of favor and friendly good will I have shewn " him." From an ingenuous mind, such instances of affectionate attachment will require and uniformly obtain a due reciprocation of kindness (5).

MR. SIDNEY at this time, held the office of cupbearer to the Queen, but by whose interest, or when he was first appointed, it does not appear.

HAVING received intelligence that his father was surrounded with persons who betrayed his secrets, he apprized him of this circumstance. " I must needes," says he, " im- " pute it to some aboute you, that there is little written " from you or to you, that is not perfittly known to your " professed enemies (6)." Hence an unpleasant indication of anger occurred in the letter which he wrote, not to the steward of his father, but to one in a more respectable situation,

(5) Sidney Papers. Vol. ii. p. 153.

(6) Letter from Mr. Sidney to his father, April 25, 1578, in the Sidney Papers.

Digitized by Google

tion, to Edward Mollineux (7), Esquire, of Nutfield, in the county of Surrey, the secretary to Sir Henry Sidney. He had hastily and without sufficient grounds suspected this gentleman, the real friend of his family, of divulging the contents of his letters to his father. The language, in which he intimates his resentment of a supposed injury, is extremely indecorous, and admits no excuse. Flushed with the ardour of youth, he is for a moment alive to the impulses of anger, the victim of violence and irritability of temper. It may reasonably be presumed that the mild and judicious reply of his father's friend, the remembrance of his exuberance of passion, or a clear conviction that he had precipitately advanced a rash and injurious accusation, might effectually operate on his virtuous mind, so as to check his violence and to soften and disarm his wrath.

THEY

(7) To the faithful pen of this gentleman we owe the account of Sir Henry Sidney and his family, inserted in the continuation of Hollingshed's Chronicle. The Secretaries of Sir Henry Sidney recommended themselves by their assiduity, their political knowledge, and, above all, by their integrity. Mr. Mollineux was the last of his Secretaries. He left him unrewarded, at the time of his death, deeply regretting his inability to make a just compensation for his great services. He often said that Mollineux had *quailed* under his hand, for that was the term he used, but he hoped time or some good men, in respect of his public services, would repair that he could not do.

Digitized by Google

THEY were soon reconciled to each other. Four years after, when Mr. Sidney was ambitious of being appointed a member of the privy council, he did not think it beneath his dignity to request the interest of this his father's secretary, to secure not only his own admission into the council, but also that of his relation Mr. Conningesly (8).

THIS incident, however disagreeable it may appear, affords an instance of zeal for his father's reputation, which certainly renders his conduct less blamable.

JOHN CASIMIR, Count Palatine of the Rhine, resolutely opposed the arbitrary power of the King of Spain, in the Netherlands. The states had commissioned him to receive the money, which was furnished by the Queen

of

(8) "Sir Philip Sidney, to Edward Mollineux, Esquire.

"MOLLINEUX,

"I pray thee write to me diligently. I would you came down yourself. Solicitt "my Lord Treasurer, and Mr. Vice-chamberlain for my beeing of the Counceill. I "woold fain bring in my Cosin Conningesly, if it weare possible. You shall do me "much pleasur to labour it. Farewell, even very well, for so I wish you. From Here- "ford, this 23d of Juli. 1582."

"Your loving frend,

Sidney Papers, Vol. i. p. 296. "PHILIP SIDNEY."

Digitized by Google

of England to levy troops. His army, consisting wholly of Protestants, was so numerous, as to awaken the jealousy of the Catholics in the Low Countries, who suspected that, in concert with Elizabeth, he had planned the design of extirpating the Popish faith. When the prince visited England in 1578, he was most honourably entertained by the Queen (9). In a conference with him, she disclosed without reserve the high opinion which she had formed of the extraordinary abilities of Mr. Sidney, and spoke of him as being the pride of his family, and the future ornament and support of her kingdom. Charmed with the excellence of his character, both at home and abroad, Casimir invited him to join his army in the ensuing campaign. His invitation was at first accepted without hesitation. Sir Henry Sidney, while he much commended this generous ardour of his son, represented to him his own situation—the practices—the informations—the malevolent accusations that were assiduously devised against him—the assistance which his presence would afford to him; adding, that he cheerfully reposed in his help, and firmly confided in his judgment. This representation had its due effect. He

desisted

(9) In the letters of Hubert Languet, to Augustus Duke of Saxony, is an elegant narrative of Prince Casimir's honourable entertainment in England, from the twenty-second day of January to the fourteenth day of February, 1578.

Digitized by Google

desisted from his design, to the satisfaction of his father, whose steady and uncorrupted integrity, thus protected by the shield of filial affection, preserved him from the dark and insidious attempts of his enemies. How grateful must this exercise of duty be? what feelings can be more exquisitely fine, than those of a son, who by his enlightened understanding, his sagacity, and the wisdom of his counsels, thus administers consolation, protection, and joy, to a revered parent? Sir Henry Sidney was sensible of his happiness—he knew the genuine value of the treasure which he possessed. Nor could he propose better advice to his second son, Mr. Robert Sidney, than to place before his eyes the example of his brother: "Follow the advice "of your most loving brother, who in loving you, is "comparable with me, or exceedeth me. Imitate his "virtues, exercises, studies, and actions: he is a rare "ornament of his age, the very formular, that all well-"disposed young gentlemen of our court do form also their "manners and life by. In truth, I speak it without "flattery of him or myself, he hath the most virtues that "ever I found in any man. I saw him not these six "months, little to my comfort. You may hear from him "with more ease than from me. In your travels, "these documents I will give you, not as mine, but his

Digitized by Google

" practices. Seek the knowledge of the estate of every " prince, court, and city, that you pass through. Address " yourself to the company, to learn this of the elder sort, " and yet neglect not the younger. By the one you shall " gather learning, wisdom, and knowledge; by the other " acquaintance, languages, and exercise. Once again I say, " imitate him."

In another letter to this his son, he exhorts him " to " follow his discreet and virtuous brother's rule, who with " great discretion to his virtuous recommendation won " love, and could variously ply ceremony with ceremony." What can be more affecting than the conclusion of this letter? " God bless you my sweet child, in this world " and for ever, as I in this world find myself happy in my " children."—Such are the fruits of virtue in domestic life. Which of them shall we congratulate most? The good father or the equally good son!—In a family under the guidance of wisdom and religion, every thing is tranquillity, peace, and heart-felt joy.

Mr. Philip Sidney was never more gratified than when he had an opportunity of showing his attachment to science. Learned foreigners experienced from him the

Digitized by Google

kindest and most attentive reception, while his beneficence was extended to many ingenious young men, whom a desire of improvement brought into England.

In 1578, Henry Stephens printed the works of Plato in three volumes folio. The beauty, elegance, and correctness of this impression will be always admired. The Latin version annexed to it, was composed by Johannes Serranus, one of those Frenchmen of the reformed religion, who had happily escaped the Parisian massacre. He inscribed the first volume to Queen Elizabeth, whose knowledge of and veneration for the writings of the divine philosopher of Athens, exhibited a proof, if any proof were wanting, of her erudition and taste for classic literature. The translator presented to the Queen a copy of this edition, magnificently bound. At the same time he sent another copy to his dear friend, Mr. Philip Sidney, requesting to know whether her Majesty had received the volumes, and what her sentiments were concerning them. Languet gives a very high character of Serranus, whom he describes as likely to become one of the most illustrious scholars of the age, and worthy of being honoured with the patronage of the Queen of England.

Digitized by Google

It may be concluded from the letters of Languet, written to Mr. Sidney in 1578, that the latter did not relish the life of a courtier. Enriched with all the treasures of ancient and modern learning, he sighed for privacy. The gaiety and splendour of the court of Elizabeth held forth no charms for him. He had seriously declared, even when he was abroad, that nothing could be to him more desirable, than to spend his days in retirement and leisure with a few select friends. How far disappointment might afterward co-operate with this his inclination, it is difficult to determine. He was probably in this frame of mind, enraptured with the pleasures of a secret and sequestered life, when he thus translated the tenth ode of the second book of Horace (1).

You better sure shall live, not evermore
Trying high seas; nor while sea's rage you flee,
Pressing too much upon ill-harbour'd shore.
The golden mean who loves, lives safely free
From filth of foreworn house, and quiet lives
Releas'd from court where envy needs must be.

The

(1) No translation of the odes of Horace into the English language was then extant. Thomas Drant, Archdeacon of Lewes, had published "Horace his art of "poetry, pistles, and satyrs, englished and to the Earl of Ormounte addressed," printed by Marske, 1567, 4to.

Digitized by Google

The wind most oft the hugest pine-tree grieves;
The stately towers come down with greater fall,
The highest hills the bolt of thunder cleaves;
Evil haps do fill with hope, good haps appall
With fear of change the courage well prepared.
Foul winters as they come, away they shall.
Though present times and past with evils be snar'd,
They shall not last: with cittern silent muse
Apollo wakes, and bow hath somtime spar'd:
In hard estate, with stout show, valour use,
The same man still, in whom wisdom prevails;
In too full wind draw in thy swelling sails.

His friend Languet, whose opinion of the English court was not very flattering, attempted to overcome his prejudices by arousing his ambition, by expatiating on the duties which he owed to himself, to his family, to his country—by pointing out the inevitable dishonour which he would incur, if, instead of proceeding in the career of glory, he resigned himself to a life of obscurity and indolence. It seems as if he was enforcing the remark of our great poet:

..... if our virtues
Did not go forth of us, 'twere all alike
As if we had them not. *Shakespeare.*

Digitized by Google

THE letter of advice to his brother Mr. Robert Sidney, when upon his travels, was probably composed about this time. It contains an ingenuous confession of his own neglect of improvement, and inculcates the necessity of acquiring a knowledge of the situation, the manners, laws, and commerce of foreign states. The following extract from it cannot be disagreeable to the reader:

"FOR Italy," he observes, "wee know not what we "have or can have to doe with them, but to buy their "silkes and wines; and as for the other point, except "Venice, whose good lawes and customes wee can hardly "proportion to ourselves, because they are quite of a "contrary government; there is little there but tyrannous "oppression and servil yielding to them that have little or "no right over them: And for the men you shall have "there, although indeed some be excellently learned, yet "are they all given to counterfeit learning, as a man shall "learne among them more false grounds of things than "in any place I know; for from a tapster upwards they "are all discoursers in certain matters and qualities, as "horsemanship, weapons, paynting, and such are better "there than in other countries; but for other matters, as "well, if not better, you shall have them in nearer places.

Digitized by Google

" Now resteth in my memory but this point, which is " indeed the chiefe to you of all others; which is the " chiefe of what men you are to direct yourself to; for it " is certain no vessel can leave a worse taste in the liquor " it contains, than a wrong teacher infects an unskilful " hearer with that which hardly will ever out(2). I will " not tell you some absurdities I have heard travellers tell: " taste him well, before you drinke much of his doctrine. " And when you have heard it, try well what you have " heard, before you hold it for a principle: for one error " is the mother of a thousand. But you may say, how " shall I get excellent men to take paines to speake with " me? Truly, in few words, either by much expence or " much humblenesse."

A topic, which excited no little commotion and anxiety in the English nation, demanded the exercise of Sidney's superior talents. It regarded the essential interests of the kingdom—its prosperity—its religion—its liberty. The hopes of annexing the crown of England to that of France induced Catharine of Medicis, a disciple of Machiavel and

a wo-

(2) Quo semel est imbuta recens, servabit odorem
Testa diu. ..... *Hor.*

Digitized by Google

a woman ever ready to display her skill in political intrigue, to propose to Elizabeth in 1572, a matrimonial union with Henry Duke of Anjou, her favourite son. She hoped by this overture to amuse the Protestants, and to remove from their minds every sentiment of suspicion and jealousy, more effectually to accomplish what was the perpetual object of her wishes and designs, the destruction of the Hugonot chiefs. This proposal being rejected, the French ambassador was commissioned to name her youngest son, Francis Duke of Alençon, who by the elevation of his brother to the throne of Poland, suceeded to the title of the Duke of Anjou. The temper and character of the French nation can scarcely be defined in more clear and explicit terms than those which were used by Sir William Cecil, the wise counsellor of Elizabeth: "When they made "peace, it was only that they might grow in strength, and "renew hostilities with greater efficacy. As their natural "resources were immense, they soon recovered from "disaster and defeat, and it was not possible for them to "be poor and peaceable for many years (3)." With such a nation no permanent friendship can exist. A

league

(3) It was a maxim of Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, that "France can neither be "poor nor abstain from war three years together."

Digitized by Google

league of family alliance with any of the branches of the house of Valois must have been peculiarly disgustful to the people of England. Nor could the counsellors of the Queen have prudently advised such a measure at this critical season, when the effusion of that innocent blood, which so lately discoloured the streams of the Seine, required, and, in a few years, brought down from heaven a just vengeance, which extinguished the whole royal race.

To the impressions made on his mind by those scenes of slaughter, of which Mr. Sidney had been a spectator at Paris, we may in some measure attribute that ardour of patriotic zeal, with which he opposed the inclinations of " his most feared and beloved, his most sweet and gracious " sovereign," in her intended marriage with a French prince. In the speech to her Parliament in 1575, she had intimated her resolution not to forsake her poor and single state to match with the greatest monarch, " Not," said she, " that I do condemne the double knot; or judge amyss " of suche as forced by necessitie cannot dispose of them- " selves to another lyfe (4)." Yet afterward, in 1579, she seemed to be more averse from a state of celibacy. Mr. Sidney's

(4) See her speech in Harrington's Nugæ Antiquæ, Vol. iii. p. 170.

Digitized by Google

Sidney's letter to her on this subject, is pronounced by Mr. Hume, to be written with an unusual elegance of expression as well as force of reasoning (5). His sentiments on this interesting occasion, perfectly coincided with those of the Earl of Leicester.

> That I was then a traytor I deny,
> But I confesse that I was Monsieur's foe:
> And sought to break the league of amity,
> Which then betwixt my prince and him did growe:
> Doubting religion might be changed so,
> Or that our lawes and customes were in danger
> To bee corrupt, and altered by a stranger.
>
> *Leycester's Ghost.*

To this performance our ancestors in some degree owe their preservation from the yoke of foreign tyranny and oppression. It appears from several passages in the letter, that the Queen had frequently conversed with the writer of it upon the subject of her marriage. In one part of his letter, he thus addresses her; "Oft have I heard you with "protestation say, no private passion or self-affection could "lead you to this;" and again, when her opinion was

——— changed,

(5) A copy of this letter is inserted in the "Scrinia Cæciliana," or "Supplement of the Cabala," p. 201; and in the Sidney Papers, Vol. i. p. 287.

Digitized by Google

changed, " now resteth to consider what be the motives of " this sudden change, as I have heard you in most " sweet words deliver: fear of standing alone, in respect of " foreign dealings—and in them from whom you should " have respect, doubt of contempt."

It should be remembered, that this letter was originally intended for the private inspection of the Queen, " to be " submitted only to her merciful eyes." He describes her kingdom as divided into two mighty factions, and those factions bound upon the never dying knot of religion: the one consisting of those, to whom her happy government hath granted " the free exercise of the eternal truth." These, as their souls live by her happy government, so they are her chief, if not her whole strength, who can look for no better conditions than those which they now enjoy: These how their hearts will be galled, if not alienated, when they shall see you take a husband, a Frenchman, and a Papist, in whom the very common people will know this, that he is the son of a Jezebel of our age; that his brother made oblation of his own sister's marriage, the easier to make massacres of our brethren in belief; that he himself, contrary to his promise and all gratefulness, having had his liberty and principal estate by the Hugonots

Digitized by Google

means, did sack *Lacharists* (6), and utterly spoil them with fire and sword.

" THE other faction," he adds; " most rightly indeed to " be called a faction, is the Papists: men whose spirits are " full of anguish on various accounts: men of great " numbers, of great riches, and of united minds." He observes that " this double rank of people want nothing so " much as a head, who in effect, needs not but to receive " their instructions, since they may do much mischief only " with his countenance. Let the Sigingniam (7) in the

—— " time

(6) Or rather, as it is written in some manuscript copies, " La Charite," a town in France, situated upon the river Loire. The matins of Paris, equally disgraceful with the Sicilian vespers, were repeated at La Charite, one of the cautionary towns given to the Protestants, which was surprised, and the inhabitants abandoned to the rage of their enemies.

(7) Such is the reading in the supplement of the Cabala, and in the Sidney Papers. But in two MSS., one in the British Museum, the other in the library of Trinity College, Dublin, we read " the singing man," a proper appellation for a priest before the reformation, when it was his principal employment to sing or chaunt the service of the church. In 1400 John Magdalen, Chaplain to King Richard II., and much resembling him in person, was supported in his attempts to gain the regal power by many of the English nobility. These conspiracies against King Henry IV. were defeated, and Magdalen, the Pseudo-Richard, flying into Scotland, was taken and sent to London, where he suffered death, as a common traitor. See " Stowe's Annals," p. 325.

Digitized by Google

" time of Henry IV., Perkin Warbeck (8), in your grand-
" father's, but of all the most lively and proper is that of
" Louis, the French King's son, in the time of Henry III.,
" who having at all no show of title, yet did he cause the
" nobility and more to swear direct fealty and vassalage,
" and they delivered the strongest holds unto him (9):
" I say, let these be sufficient to prove, that occasion gives
" minds and scope to stranger things than ever would have
" been imagined."

HAVING delineated the character and manner of the French prince, he introduces the following parallel: " He
" of the Romish religion; and, if he be a man, must needs
" have that manlike property, to desire that all men be
" of his mind: you the erector and defender of the
" contrary; the only sun that dazzleth their eyes: He,
" French and desiring to make France great; your
" Majesty English, and desiring nothing less than that
" France should grow great: he, both by his own fancy
" and his youthful governors, embracing all ambitious
" hopes, having Alexander's image in his head, but per-

" haps

(8) Of this extraordinary man, see " Lord Bacon's History of Henry VII., Bacon's " Works," Vol. i. p. 56.

(9) The history of this period is related with great fidelity in Shakespeare's " King John."

Digitized by Google

" haps evil painted; your Majesty, with excellent virtue
" taught what you should hope, and by no less wisdom
" what you may hope, with a council renowned over all
" Christendom (1), for their well-tempered minds having
" set the utmost of their ambition in your favour, and
" the study of their souls in your safety."

On the uncertainty of succession to her throne he thus declares his opinion—" In so lineal a monarchy, where-
" ever the infants suck the love of their rightful prince,
" who would leave the beams of so fair a sun, for the
" dreadful expectation of a divided company of stars?
" Virtue and justice are the only bonds of people's love:
" and as for that point, many princes have lost their
" crowns, whose own children were manifest successors;
" and some that had their own children used as instru-
" ments of their ruin: not that I deny the bliss of children,

" but

(1) When Mr. Edmund Waller was once introduced into the closet of King James II. his Majesty asked him how he liked such a picture. " Sir," said Mr. Waller, " my eyes are dim, and I know not who it is." " It is the Princess of Orange," said the King. " Then," replied Mr. Waller, " she is like the greatest woman " in the world." " Whom do you call so?" answered the King. " Queen " Elizabeth," said Mr. Waller. " I wonder you should think so," replied the King, " but I confess *she had a wise council.*" " And, Sir," said Mr. Waller, " did you " ever know a fool choose a wise one?"

Digitized by Google

" but only to show religion and equity to be of themselves " sufficient stayes. Neither is the love was born in " the Queen, your sister's days, any contradiction here- " unto, for she was the oppressor of that religion which " lived in many men's hearts, and whereof you were " known to be the favorer: by her loss, the most excellent " prince in the world to succeed; by your loss, all blindness " upon him that sees not our misery. Lastly, and most " properly to this purpose, she had made an odious mar- " riage with a stranger, (which is now in question whether " your Majesty should do or no;) so that if your subjects do " at this time look for any after-chance, it is but as the " pilot doth to the ship-boat, if his ship should perish; " driven by extremity to the one, but, as long as he can " with his life, tendering the other (2)."

He concludes with an animated address to the Queen.— " As for this man, as long as he is but *Monsieur* in might, " and a Papist in profession, he neither can nor will greatly " shield you; and if he grow to be king, his defence will be " like Ajax's shield, which rather weighed them down than " defended those that bare it. Against contempt, if there " be any, which I will never believe, let your excellent

" virtues

(2) See " Scrinia Ceciliana," p. 201—209.

Digitized by Google

" virtues of piety, justice, and liberality, daily, if it be " possible, more and more shine. Let such particular " actions be found out, which be easie, as I think, to " be done, by which you may gratifye all the hearts of the " people; let those in whom you find trust, and to whom " you have committed trust in your weighty affairs, be " held up in the eyes of your subjects; lastly, doing as you " do, you shall be, as you be, the example of princes, the " ornament of this age, the comfort of the afflicted, the " delight of your people, and the most excellent fruit " of your progenitors, and the perfect mirror of your " posterity (3)."

Of this letter, which was written with no other view than that of promoting the happiness of the Queen, and the real welfare of the whole kingdom, Mr. Strype remarks, that it contains many brief but bright sentences, showing the mature judgment of the writer; his wisdom in counsel; his skill in politics; his acquaintance with the Roman history; his knowledge of foreign states and kingdoms,

and

(3) See in " Lodge's Illustrations of the English History," &c. Vol. ii. p. 177, a letter from the Earl of Sussex to the Queen, dated August 28, 1578, in which the arguments for and against her marriage with Monsieur are stated with great candour and strict impartiality.

Digitized by Google

and observations thence; his apprehension of the great danger from Papists; his concern for the Protestant interest abroad, of which she was the ony protectress, as well as of the religion at home; the little or no advantage she was like to receive from France; her personal danger in case of a conclusion of this marriage with Monsieur; and how dear she was to her own people. So that, in short, this letter abounding with such close application of arguments, seemed to have swayed the Queen to decline this motion (4).

THE arguments, which were adduced, could not fail of arresting her attention and awakening her prudence. In fact, she beheld in its proper light, the danger of a connexion, so generally unpleasing to her faithful Protestant subjects. She broke off the negotiation, and instantly discarded the proposals of her youthful lover.—The delicacy of this subject, and the difficulty of discussing it, without offending the Queen, were not unknown to Mr. Sidney. Yet the manly and ingenuous freedom, with which he delivered his sentiments, exposed him to no danger. " He kept access to her Majesty as before, and " a liberal conversation among the French, reverenced

—— " amongst

(4) See " Strype's Annals of the Reformation," Vol. ii. p. 567.

Digitized by Google

" amongst the worthiest of them for himself, and born in " too strong a fortification of nature for the less worthy " to abbord, either with question, familiarity, or " scorn (5)."

When objections were made to the treaty of marriage from another quarter, they were not heard with equal candour and mildness. A most rigid sentence was pronounced and executed on the author and printer of a tract entitled, " The discoverie of the gaping gulph, wherein to England " is like to be swallowed by a French marriage if the " Lorde forbid not the bands by letting her Majestie se the " sin and punishement thereof." 8vo, 1579. The former, STUBBS, a Member of Lincoln's Inn, was condemned to lose his right hand as a libeller. Such were his constancy and loyalty, that when this hand was struck off, he waved his hat with the other, saying to the people, " God save the " Queen." PAGE, who printed the libel, had no sooner undergone the same cruel punishment, than he exclaimed, " There lies the hand of a true Englishman." Mr. Camden was present at these ghastly spectacles. He tells us that the surrounding multitude were altogether silent, either out

of

(5) " Sir F. Grevil's Life of Sir Philip Sidney," p. 74.

Digitized by Google

of pity towards the men, being of most honest and unblamable report, or else out of hatred of the marriage, which most men presaged would be the overthrow of religion. Is there not cause to lament, that the annals of our country should be contaminated by the exhibition of such deeds of savage severity? Yet justice to the memory of the Queen renders it necessary to remark, that this asperity of punishment is to be attributed to a perverted policy, originating in an improper deference to the French prince, rather than to her own disposition, which was naturally mild and compasionate (6).

AMONG

(6) It is scarcely credible, but the fact will admit no doubt, that the Queen's nativity was calculated according to the rules of Astrology, then in vogue, to determine whether the marriage would prove prosperous or otherwise. It is unnecessary to add, that the result of this investigation was extremely favourable to the measure, and that every thing propitious to her was portended.

See "Strype's Annals," Vol. ii. p. 175, and the "Appendix," No. iv.

The young men of the University of Cambridge, who in their opinions on public measures are not often mistaken, were perfectly averse from the Queen's marriage. A bachelor of arts, Sir Morden, of Peterhouse, ventured to declaim against the French prince with all the severity of invective. With whatever zeal the Vice-chancellor and other heads of houses seemed inclined to punish him, the plea was admitted, that it was only a scholastic exercise, in imitation of Tully's orations against Verres and Catiline. *Strype's Annals, Vol. iii. p. 48.*

George Buchanan in a letter written from Edinburgh, Nov. 9, 1574, to Mr. Daniel Rogers, the intimate friend of Sidney, expresses his astonishment at the proposal

Digitized by Google

AMONG the fashionable amusements in the court of Elizabeth, "none was more pleasing to the beholders, "or more noble in itself, than justs with sword and "launce." Plays, masks, triumphs, and tournaments, are enumerated among those many allurements, which she adopted, to conciliate to herself the admiration and affection of her subjects. In 1580, Philip Earl of Arundel, and Sir William Drury his assistant, equally ambitious with their contemporaries to acquire glory in the tournaments, that were then so frequent, challenged all comers to try their feats of arms in those exercises (7). This challenge was given in the genuine spirit of chivalry in honour of the Queen. Among those, who gallantly offered themselves as defenders, were Edward Vere, Earl of

——— Oxford,

posal of this marriage. He believed that the French Prince would murder the Queen of England and marry the Queen of Scotland. "Quorsum ad Britanniam eo? Ad "nuptias ais; et id ego credo. Ad quas? Cum reginâ vestra. Alii, ut volunt, accie "piant. Ego prorsus ejus consilium esse reor, ut vestram trucidet, nostram ducat "formâ, ætate, et amicorum opibus florentem, et expertæ jam fœcunditatis."

Buchanani Epistolæ, Londini, 1711.

(7) See in "Dr. Beattie's Essays," p. 540, the judicious remarks of Lord Littleton on tilts and tournaments.

Digitized by Google

Oxford (8), Lord Windsor (9), Mr. Philip Sidney, and fourteen others. The victory was adjudged by her Majesty to the Earl of Oxford. That nobleman had already been distinguished on a smilar occasion by a prize, for the receiving whereof he was led, armed, by two ladies into the presence-chamber. Such were the honours dispensed to the conqueror in these achievements of mimic war. His own successful exploits, in one of these public games, are recorded by Mr. Sidney himself.

" Having this day my horse, my hand, my lance,
" Guided so well that I obtained the prize
" Both by the judgment of the English eyes,
" And of some sent from that sweet en'my France;
" Horsemen my skill in horsemanship advance,
" Townfolks my strength; a daintier judge applies
" His praise to sleight, which from good use doth rise;
" Some lucky wits impute it but to chance,
——— " Others,

(8) Edward Vere, the seventeenth Earl of Oxford, succeeded his father in his titles and honours in 1562, and died in 1604. His poetical talents were much admired, or at least much extolled by his contemporaries: and such of his sonnets as are preserved in " the paradise of dainty devices," are certainly not among the worst, although they are by no means the best in that collection. One only entitled " The Judgment of " Desire" can be said to rise above mediocrity.

See " Ellis's specimens of the early English Poets," Vol. ii. p. 137.

(9) Frederick, the fourth Lord Windsor, is classed among the nobles, who were distinguished in the court of Elizabeth by their bravery and skill in justings, barriers, and tourney. See Sir William Segar's, " Honor, military and civill," p. 195.

Digitized by Google

" Others, because of both sides I do take
" My blood from them who did excell in this,
" Think Nature me a man of arms did make.
" How far they shoot awry! The true cause is,
" STELLA look'd on, and from her heavenly face
" Sent forth the beams which made so fair my race."

Astrophel and Stella. St. xli.

Nor could Spenser pay a more acceptable compliment to his patron, than by alluding to his skill in chivalry in the poetical address to his book, which is prefixed to " the " Shepheard's Calender."

" Goe, little book! thyself present,
" A child, whose parent is unkent,
" To him that is the president
" Of nobleness and chevalree."

In this year the altercation, which arose between the Earl of Oxford and Mr. Sidney, became the subject of general conversation. The rumour of it, which was extended to the different courts of Europe, occasioned much real sorrow to his friend Hubert Languet, and to prince Casimir; the latter of whom interested himself so far, as to offer his assistance in any way, that might be deemed serviceable. They both exculpated Mr. Sidney, as being unwarily drawn into this dispute, fervently wishing

Digitized by Google

that he had another and a more noble theatre whereon to display his courage and to satisfy his desire of fame.

Mr. Sidney was playing at tennis, a game in which he delighted, and to which he makes allusions in several parts of his writings. The young earl entered the tennis-court, and, without urging any cause, ordered him to depart, and that "with so over-mastering a manner of pride, "as a generous heart could not brook it;" and, on a refusal to obey this order, had recourse to the repeated use of illiberal appellations. Mr. Sidney, through an assurance that these appellations were unjustly and falsely applied to himself, intimated this in plain and undisguised language. A crowd being assembled, and the French ambassadors accidentally becoming spectators of this scene of tumult, he left the tennis-court to the noble peer, who, declining to apologize for the language which he had used, sent him a challenge. Revenge is the disease of honour, and, in general, as opposite to real wisdom and courage, as the gloom of midnight darkness to the brightness of the noon-tide beam. The lords of the Queen's council interposed: they commanded a peace, and laboured a reconciliation. Sidney, thinking himself injured, had determined to make no submission. The Queen privately

Digitized by Google

reprimanded him, observing that the nobility were a kind of rampart betwixt the populace and the throne. When she attempted to soften his resentment, he is said to have vindicated himself, by addressing her to the following purport, with such reverence as became him. "First, "that place was never intended for privilege to wrong; "witness herself, who, how sovereign soever she were by "throne, birth, education, and nature, yet was she content "to cast her own affections into the same mold her "subjects did, and govern all her rights by the laws." Again he besought her Majesty "to consider, that, although "he were a great lord by birth, alliance, and grace, yet "he was no lord over him; and therefore the difference "of degrees between free men could not challenge any "other homage than precedency." And by her father's act, (to make a princely wisdom more familiar,) he instanced the government of King Henry VIII. who gave the gentry free and safe appeal to his feet, against the oppression of the grandees, and found it wisdom, by the stronger corporation in numbers, to keep down the greater in power, inferring else, that, "if they should unite, the "overgrown might be tempted by still coveting more, "to fall, as the holy angels did, by affecting equality

Digitized by Google

" with their Maker(1)." These sentiments uttered with energy, and without violating that veneration, which was due to royalty, did not offend or displease the Queen.

It has been surmised that this contention originated in the jealousy of those two parties, into which the court of Elizabeth was then divided: the one viewing Monsieur's proposed marriage with complacency and joy, the other contemplating it as the source of inevitable distress and misery to the English nation. Hence Languet advises his friend to be upon his guard, if the Duke of Anjou, surrounded with a numerous train of French nobility, should arrive in England. He makes no secret of his apprehensions of extreme hazard to his person, from their well-known temerity and vindictive disposition.

Will it be improper to remark, that of these two young men, thus embroiled in an unpleasant quarrel, the one, impressed with the idea that it was not possible to enter the temple of Fame, without a previous admission into that of Virtue, persevered in the paths of integrity and honour,

—— while

(1) " Sir Fulke Grevil's Life of Sir Philip Sidney," p. 81.

Digitized by Google

while the other debased himself by a life of dissipation and guilt? Sir Henry Spelman represents the Earl of Oxford, as "having not only wasted the great and most "ancient inheritance of that earldom, but as having also "defaced the castles and houses thereof(2)."

To recover the composure and serenity of his mind, which must have been somewhat disturbed by this incident, Mr. Sidney retired to Wilton(3), the seat of his brother in law the Earl of Pembroke. In this seat of rural beauty, he planned the design of the Arcadia. It has been conjectured that the Ethiopic history of Heliodorus, which had been recently translated into English prose by Thomas Underdowne, suggested that new mode of writing

romance,

(2) "History of Sacrilege," p. 207.

(3) One of the apartments at Wilton is said to have the pannels painted with several of the most remarkable stories in the Arcadia, badly executed at first, and now almost obliterated by age. In Gough's edition of Camden's Britannia, vol. I. p. 329, Houghton Conquest, in Bedfordshire, is named as the seat of the Countess of Pembroke, in which Sir Philip Sidney wrote his Arcadia. This account is certainly erroneous. Houghton House was built by the Countess of Pembroke; but not till long after the death of her brother. Her husband, Henry Earl of Pembroke, died in 1601; and in her widowhood she built this house, and died herself in 1620.

Digitized by Google

romance, which is pursued in this work (4). It seems however more probable that he derived the plan of his work, from the Arcadia of Sanazzarius, a complete edition of which was printed at Milan, in 1504. The persons introduced by the Italian author are shepherds; and their language, manners, and sentiments, are such as suit only the innocence and simplicity of pastoral life. Like the English Arcadia, it consists partly of verse and partly of prose, after the manner of Boëtius.

THE compositions, which were first distinguished by the name of Romance, appeared in those ages in which the absurdities of chivalry were carried to the utmost excess. They comprised a narrative of various achievements and adventures, which surpassed all bounds of credibility: and introduced a new creation of beings, detailing in every page the wonderful incidents arising from the prowess of knights prepared to redress all wrongs, from the intervention of magicians, dragons, and giants, invulnerable men and winged horses. The knights of these romances, the heroes celebrated in them, were patterns not of courage

merely,

(4) Abraham Fraunce translated into English hexameters the Ethiopics of Heliodorus, 1591.

Digitized by Google

merely, but of religion, generosity, courtesy, and fidelity, while the heroines were no less remarkable for modesty, delicacy, and the most graceful dignity of manners. This species of composition was succeeded by another kind of romance, of which we have specimens in the Astræa of D'urfé, the grand Cyrus, the Clelia and Cleopatra of Madam Scuderi, the Arcadia of Sir Philip Sidney, and the other grave and stately compositions in the same style. These may be considered as forming the second stage of romance writing. The heroism and the gallantry, the moral and virtuous turn of the chivalry romance were still preserved: but the dragons, the necromancers, the enchanted castles, were banished, and some small resemblance to human nature was admitted.— Still however there was too much of the marvellous in them to please an age, which aspired to refinement. The characters were discerned to be strained, the style swollen, the adventures incredible, and the books themselves were voluminous and tedious. Hence this sort of composition assumed a third form, and from magnificent heroic Romance dwindled down into the familiar Novel (5).

(5) See this description of the different kinds of fictitious history, in Dr. Blair's "Lectures on Rhetoric," Vol. ii. p. 306. 4to.

Digitized by Google

It must affix no small degree of merit to the Arcadia to reflect, that the reader of it will meet with no tale of obscenity, no dark attempt of lawless lust to destroy the purity of virgin innocence, or to corrupt the chastity of the marriage bed—no wicked artifice to poison the mind with the principles of irreligion, and thus to leave it a prey to the violence of passion, the blandishments of vice, or the enchantments of pleasure. Sidney's shepherds are the patterns of that simplicity and innocence, which once adorned the pastoral life. The author of the Arcadia, so far from allowing to it any superiority of merit, undervalued it as an idle composition, as a trifle, and triflingly handled. In an address to his sister, whom he loved with the most endearing tenderness, he intimates his fears, that, like the spider's web, it will be thought fitter to be swept away, than to be worn to any other purpose. It was originally written on loose sheets of paper, most of it in her presence, the rest on sheets sent to her, as soon as they were finished. His wish is, that it should not walk abroad; and he exhorts her to read it at her idle times, and not to blame, but to laugh at the follies, which her good judgment will find in it. Previously to his death, he is said to have made a request similar to that of Virgil, concerning the unfinished

Digitized by Google

poem of the Æneid, that it might be committed to the flames. A modern poet has alluded to this circumstance in the following lines:

> *Fontaine* and *Chaucer* dying, wish'd unwrote
> The sprightliest effort of their wanton thought,
> *Sidney* and *Waller*, brightest sons of fame,
> Condemn'd the charm of ages to the flame. *Dr. Young.*

DIFFERENT was the conduct of the ingenious prelate of Tricca in Thessaly, of whom it is related, that, when it was proposed to him to burn the romance which he had written, or to resign his bishopric, he chose the latter.

HE did not complete the third book, nor was any part of the work printed during his life. His design was to have arranged the whole anew; and it is asserted on the authority of Ben Jonson, in his conversation with Mr. Drummond of Hawthornden in Scotland, in the year 1619, that he intended to change the subject, by celebrating the prowess and military deeds of King Arthur. Apelles thought even his best and most finished pictures capable of improvement. Surely then much would have been amended in the rude draught of the ARCADIA, if the

Digitized by Google

author had revised it. The scattered manuscripts, which he left, were collected by his sister, to whose care they were consigned, and for whose delight and entertainment they were written. The whole was corrected by her pen, and carefully perused by others under her direction, so that it was very properly called "The Countess of Pembroke's ARCADIA (6)."

WOULD it not be uncandid and ungenerous to examine this posthumous volume by the rules of rigid criticism? It

(6) Mr. Abraham Fraunce was the author of a pastoral, entitled "The Countess of "Pembroke's Ivy-Church," as also of "The Countess of Pembroke's Emanuel."— These Poems were thus called, because they were dedicated to her.

That the Arcadia was read by the ladies, appears from a passage quoted by Mr. Warton in his history of English Poetry, Vol. iii. p. 42, from a pamphlet entitled "Tom "of all Trades, or the plaine pathway to preferment, 1600, 4to. pp. 47. 48." "Let "them learn plaine workes of all kinde, so they take heed of too open seaming. In- "steade of songes and musicke, let them learn cookerie and laundrie. And instead of "reading Sir Philip Sidney's Arcadia, let them reade the groundes of good "huswifery."

In Sidney's Arcadia are several allusions to, and descriptions of, the manners and characters of the age, in which it was written. Thus ladies of high rank were then celebrated for their knowledge of physic and pharmacy. Hence Gynæcia is represented as "having skill in surgery, an art in those days much esteemed, because it "served to virtuous courage, which ladies, even with the contempt of cowards, seem "to cherish."

T

Digitized by Google

It now lies neglected on the shelf, and has almost sunk into oblivion. Yet the reception it obtained from the public, having gone through fourteen impressions, and having been translated into the French, the Dutch, and other European languages, clearly evinces that it was once held in very high estimation. It was read with attention by Shakespeare (7), Milton and Waller (8). "There is,"

——— saith

(7) Our great Poet often alludes to Sidney's Arcadia. In "The Gentlemen of "Verona," Valentine assumes the command of a band of outlaws. This incident is probably copied from the Arcadia, where Pylades heads the Helotes.

The episode of Gloster and his sons is evidently taken from the same work, in the first edition of which in 1590, is a chapter with this title, "The pitifull state and story "of the Paphlagonian unkinde king and his kinde sonne, first related by the sonne, "then by the blind father."

Of Benedict in "Much Ado about Nothing," it is said Act. iii. Sc. 2. "He hath "twiee or thrice cut Cupid's bow-string, and the little *hangman* dare not shoot at "him." One of Shakespeare's commentators conjectures the true reading to be *hench-man*, a page or attendant, which the printer inadvertently changed into hang-man. But the Poet plainly took the expression from the second book of the Arcadia.

Millions of years the old drivell Cupid lives
While still more wretch more wicked he doth prove,
Till now at length, that Jove him office gives
At Juno's suit, who much did Argos love,
In this our world a *hangman* for to be
Of all those fools, that will have all they see.

Digitized by Google

saith that eminent civilian, Dr. Richard Zouch (9), "who "hath undertaken to illustrate by places of the ARCADIA "all the points of the art of speaking." And it is remarked by a very acute and ingenious writer, that "if some "subsequent poets, play-writers and novelists had been "put to their purgation, it would have appeared how

"much

(8) Waller's elegant verses on his Sacharissa, Lady Dorothy Sidney, are unintelligible to the reader who is not acquainted with Sidney's Arcadia.

In Collins's "Ode upon the Passions" the finished picture of Fear seems to have been first sketched by Sir Philip Sidney.

A satyr once did run away for dread
With sound of horn, which he himself did blow,
Fearing and fear'd thus from himself he fled,
Deeming strange evil in that he did not know.

Sidney.

First Fear his hand, his skill to try,
Amid the chords bewilder'd laid,
And back recoil'd, he knew not why,
Even at the sound himself had made.

Collins.

Butler in the following lines is supposed to allude to Sir Philip Sidney's Poem in the Arcadia, wherein is a long dialogue between the speaker and echo.

—Echo from the hollow ground
His doleful wailings did resound
More wilfully, by many times,
Than in small poets splay-foot rhimes,
That made in their ruthful stories
To answer to Int'rogatories.

Hudibras. P. i. C. iii. 184.

And

Digitized by Google

" much they have been obliged to Sir Philip Sidney's " ARCADIA." In short, it was almost universally admired, while men of genius and learning attempted to continue and perfect it.

WHEN Sir William Temple, who was himself no mean poet, treats of the change of poetry by translating it into prose, or clothing it in those loose robes or common veils, that disguised or covered the true beauties of its shape, he subjoins

---

And again in P. i. C. iii. 339.

So cowards never use their might
But against such as will not fight,

he probably alludes to the combat between the two cowards, Damætas and Clinias, described in the third book of the Arcadia.

(9) In the address to the reader printed at the end of his poem entitled " The Dove, or Passages of Cosmography, 1613."

Dr. Richard Zouch probably alludes to the work of Mr. Thomas Blount entitled, " The Academy of Eloquence, containing a compleat English Rhetorique exemplified." This author derives many of his examples from the Arcadia of Sir Philip Sidney, whom he characterizes as " an eloquent, learned, and valiant gentleman." He seems to have considered the Arcadia as the standard of fine writing. He makes its excellence to consist principally in the rare and perfect description of characters. He remarks that personages and affections are there depicted in the most vivid colours, while " a steadfast decency, and uniform difference of manners is observed;" that " many *lively*," or, as it is in some impressions, *lovely* and notable portraits are there introduced which he will not set down, " to save his readers so sweet a labor, as the " reading

Digitized by Google

subjoins these observations: " The last kind of Poetry in " Prose, is that which in latter ages has overrun the World " under the name of Romances, which though it seems " modern and a production of the *Gothic* Genius, yet the " Writing is ancient. The Remainders of Petronius " Arbiter seem to be of this kind, and that which Lucian " calls his true History: but the most ancient that passes " by the name is Heliodorus, famous for the Author's " chusing to lose his Bishoprick, rather than disown that

——

" Child

" reading that which will alone make them eloquent and wise;" that " Sir Philip Sid- " ney's course, besides reading Aristotle and Theophrastus, was to imagine the thing " present, that his pen might the better describe it."

Prefixed to this little volume is a print by Faithorn, exhibiting the portraits of Demosthenes, Cicero, Francis Lord Bacon, and Sir Philip Sidney. From this circumstance we learn that a very high opinion was entertained of the literary fame of the latter. He is here joined with the two great orators of antiquity, and with Bacon the luminary of modern eloquence, that " noble speaker who was full of gravity in his " speaking; whose language, where he could spare or pass by a jest, was nobly censo- " rious. No man ever spoke more neatly, more prestly, more weightily, or suffered less " emptiness, less illeness in what he uttered. No member of his speech but consisted of " his own grace: His hearers could not cough or look aside from him without loss. He " commanded where he spoke: and had his judges angry or pleased at his devotion. No " man had their affections more in his power. The fear of every man that heard him " was lest he should make an end." See *Ben Jonson's Discoveries.*

The author of this book is to be distinguished from Sir Thomas Pope Blount who composed a much larger work: " De Re Poeticâ: or Remarks upon Poetry, with cha- " racters and censures of the most considerable Poets, &c. 4to. 1694."

Digitized by Google

" Child of his Wit. The true spirit or vein of ancient " poetry in this kind seems to shine most in Sir Philip " Sidney, whom I esteem the greatest poet and the noblest " genius of any that have left writings behind them, or " published in ours or any other language: a person born " capable not only of forming the greatest idea, but leaving " the noblest example, if the length of his life had been " equal to the excellence of his wit and his virtues."

THIS performance is commended by Dr. Peter Heylin, when he describes Arcadia in Greece, as " a country " where fitness of pasturage and grazing hath made it the " subject of many worthy and witty discourses, especially " that of Sir Philip Sidney, of whom I cannot but make " honorable mention. A book, which besides its excellent " language, rare contrivances, and delectable stories, " hath in it all the strains of poesy, comprehendeth the " universal art of speaking, and to them who can discern " and will observe, affordeth notable rules for demeanor " both private and public."—" I confess," saith Fuller with his usual quaintness, " I have heard some of modern " pretended wits cavil at the ARCADIA, because they " made it not themselves: such who say that his book is " the occasion that many precious hours are otherwise

Digitized by Google

" spent no better, must acknowledge it also the cause " that many idle hours are otherwise spent no worse than " in reading thereof."

To these testimonies may be added a more recent authority from the song of the plaintive Cowper.

" Would I had fall'n upon those happier days,
" That poets celebrate; those golden times,
" And those Arcadian scenes, that *Maro* sings,
" And *Sidney, warbler of poetic prose.*
" Nymphs were Dianas then, and swains had hearts,
" That felt their virtues: innocence, it seems,
" From courts dismissed, found shelter in the groves;
" The footsteps of simplicity, impress'd
" Upon the yielding herbage, (so they sing)
" Then were not all effac'd: then speech profane,
" And manners profligate, were rarely found;
" Observed as prodigies, and soon reclaim'd."

Cowper's Task, B. iv.

Our author is censured by Horace, the third and last Earl of Orford " for some absurd attempts to fetter English " verse in Roman chains(1)." But similar attempts were

made

(1) Lord Orford compares Langley, an architect in the reign of George the II. who endeavoured to adapt Gothic architecture to Roman measures, to Sir Philip Sidney, who attempted to regulate English verse by Roman feet.

Lord Orford's Works, Vol. iii. p. 485.

Digitized by Google

made by the French poets. A writer of the name of Jodelle produced the first essay in 1553, with a distich consisting of an hexameter and a pentameter verse (2).

It is certainly impossible to discover any harmony of numbers in these lines of Sidney,

" Happy shepherd, with thanks to the Gods, still think to be thankful
" That to thy advancement their wisdoms have thee abased;"

Or in the following lines,

" Fortune, nature, love long have contended about thee,
" Which should most miseries cast on a worm as I am."

Or in Stanyhurst's translation of a passage in Virgil,

" O to thee, fair virgin, what terms may rightly be fitted,
" Thy tongue, thy visage no mortal frayltie resembleth (3)."

Nor are many of Sidney's Sapphic verses more agreeable to the ear than the elegiac.

In

(2) Leo Battista Alberti first adapted his native language to the measure of Latin poetry, of which the following specimen is preserved:

" Questa pur extrema miserabil 'pistola mando
" A te che spiegi miseramente noi."

See his life prefixed to Leoni's edition of his architecture. Fol. Lond. 1726

(3) O quam te memorem, virgo! namque haud tibi vultus
Mortalis, nec vox hominem sonat. ..... *Virg.*

Digitized by Google

In fact he was induced to make an unsuccessful endeavour to improve and embellish the versification of his native language, which seems to have been then almost totally devoid of harmony and cadence. In this endeavour he was followed by Sir Walter Raleigh and others his contemporaries (4). The poet Spenser did not disapprove the design. On this subject he has expressed his sentiments at large, and not without a vein of pleasantness, in a letter to Mr. Gabriel Harvey, his long-approved and singular

(4) Abraham Fraunce, who is said to have been educated at St. John's college, Cambridge, by the munificence of Mr. Philip Sidney, has imitated his patron in his versification. And William Webb, in a discourse of English poetry, printed in 1586, and composed in defence of the new mode of writing English hexameters, has given his own version of two of Virgil's Bucolics in that measure.

"Gabriel Harvey desired only to be *epitaph'd* the inventor of the English "hexameter, and for a while every one would be halting on Roman feet; but the "ridicule of Joseph Hall, in one of his satyres, and the reasoning of Daniel in his "'Defence of Rhyme,' against Campion, presently reduced us to our old Gothick."

Farmer on the learning of Shakespeare.

As an illustration of the line in Mr. Pope's works,

And Sidney's verse halts ill on Roman feet,

The following stanza has been quoted,

If the spheres senseless do yet hold a music,
If the swan's sweet voice be not heard, but at death,
If the mute timber, when it hath the life lost,
Yieldeth a lute's tune.

Digitized by Google

singular good friend. " I like your English hexameter so " well, that I also enure my pen sometimes in that kind, " which I find indeed, as I have often heard you defend " in word, neither so hard nor so harsh, but that it will " easily and fairly yield itself to our mother tongue. The " only and chiefest hardness, which seemeth, is in the " accent, which some-time gapeth, and, as it were, yawneth " ill-favouredly, coming short of that it should, and some- " times exceeding the measure of the number; as in " *carpenter*, the middle syllable being used short in speech, " when it should be read long in verse, seemeth like a " lame gosling that draweth one leg after her. And " *heaven* being used short, as one syllable, when it is " in verse, stretched with a diastole, is like a lame dog, " that holdeth up one leg: but it is to be won with " custom, and rough words must be subdued: for why " may not we, as the Greeks, have the kingdom of our " own language, and measure our accents by the sound, " reserving the quantity to the verse (5)."

THOUGH our poetry wanted something more solid than the tinkling of rhyme to ennoble it, the English verse is not

(5) See Appendix, No. 3.

Digitized by Google

not susceptible of the measure of hexameter and pentameter. It was reserved for the superior genius of Milton to improve and embellish blank verse with a variety of pauses, equally removed from the dull monotony of rhyme, and the too rapid levity of the Roman metre.

LORD ORFORD has also represented the ARCADIA as "a tedious, lamentable, pedantic, pastoral romance, "which the patience of a young virgin in love cannot now "wade through." How far this description is just, it is scarcely worth while to decide. It must surely be a tedious and painful employment, not only to the love-sick nymph, but to any reader of modern times, to be under the necessity of reading the whole of this romance. The taste, the manners, the opinions, the language of the English nation, have undergone a very great revolution, since the reign of Queen Elizabeth. Yet there are passages in this work exquisitely beautiful—useful observations on life and manners—a variety and accurate discrimination of characters—fine sentiments expressed in strong and adequate terms—animated descriptions, equal to any that occur in the ancient or modern poets—sage lessons of morality, and judicious reflexions on government and policy. A reader who takes up the volume, may be compared to a

Digitized by Google

traveller, who has a long and dreary road to pass. The objects, that successively meet his eye, may not in general be very pleasing; but occasionally he is charmed with a more beautiful prospect—with the verdure of a rich valley—with a meadow enamelled with flowers—with the murmur of a rivulet—the swelling grove—the hanging rock—the splendid villa. These charming objects abundantly compensate for the joyless regions he has traversed. They fill him with delight, exhilarate his drooping spirits—and at the decline of day he reposes with complacency and satisfaction (6).

——— It

(6) A very slight and cursory view will supply many passages, which prove that the author of the Arcadia was not ignorant of the writings of classic antiquity.

1. Are not the following lines written in imitation of Sappho's celebrated ode preserved by Longinus?

My muse, what ails this ardor?
My eyes be dim, my lims shake:
My voice is hoarse, my throat scorch'd,
My tongue to this my roof cleaves. *Arcadia, B. ii.*

2. There is no man suddenly either excellently good, or extremely evil. *B. i.*

Nemo repentè fuit turpissimus. *Juven.*

3. He

Digitized by Google

It must be owned that no Author has depicted in more true and lively colours the characters of the persons, whom he introduces. Thus in *Kalander* we behold "a man, who "for his hospitality is so much haunted, that no news stir

——— "but

3. He water plowes, and soweth in the sand,
And hopes the flickering wind with net to hold. *B. ii.*

Εις ὑδωρ σπειρεις. Gr. Adag. In aquam sementem jacis.

Δικτυῳ ἀνεμον θηρᾶς—Reti ventos venaris.

Nos tamen hoc agimus, tenuique in pulvere sulcos
Ducimus, et littus tenui versamus aratro. *Virg.*

The following severe lines are well known.

Nell onde solca, e nell' avene semina,
E'l vago vento spera in rete accogliere,
Chi sue speranze fonda in cor di femina. *Sannazar, Arcad. Eglog. viii.* 10.

4. A sea of miseries!
Mare Malorum. *Plaut.*

"sea of troubles". Hamlet

5. She that followed conquered indeed with being conquered.
Græcia victa ferum victorem cepit. *Hor.*

6. How did my soul hang at his lips while he spake? *B. i.*
..... pendebat ab ore loquentis. *Hor.*

7. They are never alone that are accompanied with noble thoughts. *B. i.*
Nunquam minus solus, quam cum solus.

8. This

Digitized by Google

" but comes to his ears; for his upright dealing so beloved
" of his neighbours, that he hath many ever ready to do

——— " him

8. This tongue perchance unfortunate, but never false, shall not now begin to lie unto my prince. *B. ii.*

..... Nec, si miserum fortuna Sinonem
Finxit, vanum etiam mendacemque improba finget. *Virg.*

9. Like the feeble flower, whose stalk cannot sustain his weighty top, his top downward doth drooping lean. *B. iii.*

Purpureus veluti cum flos, succisus aratro,
Languescit moriens. *Virg.*

10 Iron sleep. *B. iii.*

Illi dura quies oculos et ferreus urget
Somnus. *Virg.*

In 1518, Sidney wrote his " Wooeing stuff," in which are these lines:

Faint Amoret, what do'st thou think
To tast love's honey, and not drink
One dram of *gall*? or to devour
A world of *sweet*, and tast no sour?

This sentiment, so frequent in ancient and modern poetry, is found in Spenser's Thomalin's embleme, at the end of the pastoral entitled " March," in the Shepherd's Calendar.

Of hony and of gaule in love there is store,
The hony is much, but the gaule is more

..... ecastor et melle et felle est fecundissimus,
Gustu dat dulce, amarum ad satietatem usque aggerit.
Plautus Cistell, A. 1. Sc. 1. 71.

Digitized by Google

" him their uttermost service; and by the great good-will " his prince bears him, may soon obtain the use of his " name and credit, which hath a principal sway, not only " in his own *Arcadia*, but in all these countries of *Pelo-* " *ponnesus:* and, which is worth all, all these things give him " not so much power, as his nature gives him will to " benefit: so that it seems no *musick is so sweet to his ear, as* " *deserved thanks.*" In the person of Palladius, is described a young man of singular merit, who " has a mind of most " excellent composition, a piercing wit, quite void of " ostentation, high erected thought seated in a heart of " courtesy, an eloquence as sweet in the uttering as slow to " come to the uttering, a behaviour so noble as gave a " majesty to adversity; and all in a man whose age could " not be above one-and-twenty years." And in *Basilius* is represented the amiable temper of " a prince of sufficient " skill to govern a quiet country, where the good minds of " the former princes had set down good laws, and the well " bringing up of the people doth serve as a most sure bond " to hold them:" But " he excels in nothing so much as " the zealous love of his people, wherein he doth not only " pass all his own foregoers, but, as I think, all the princes " living: whereof the cause is, that though he exceed not " in the virtues which get admiration, as depth of wisdom,

Digitized by Google

" height of courage, and largeness of magnificence, yet is
" he notable in those which stir affection, as truth of word,
" meekness, courtesy, mercifulness, and liberality."

WHAT description can surpass that of the two daughters of Basilius? " so beyond measure excellent in all the gifts " allotted to reasonable creatures, that we may think they " were born to show, that nature is no step-mother to that " sex, how much soever some men, sharp-witted only in evil- " speaking, have sought to disgrace them. The elder is " named *Pamela*, by many men not deemed inferior to her " sister: for my part, when I marked them both, methought " there was, if at least such perfections may receive the " word of more, more sweetness in *Philoclea*, but more " majesty in *Pamela:* methought love played in *Philoclea's* " eyes, and threatened in *Pamela's:* methought *Philoclea's* " beauty only persuaded, but so persuaded as all hearts " must yield: *Pamela's* beauty used violence, and such vio- " lence as no heart could resist. And it seems that such " proportion is between their minds: *Philoclea* so bashful, as " though her excellencies had stolen into her before she " was aware; so humble, that she will put all pride out of " countenance; in sum, such proceeding as will stir hope, " but teach good manners. *Pamela* of high thoughts, who

Digitized by Google

" avoids not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by
" making that one of her excellencies to be void of pride;
" her mother's wisdom, greatness, nobility, but knit with a
" more constant temper."

It is unnecessary to adduce other proofs of that accuracy and precision, which the author of the Arcadia discovers in his discrimination of characters. An instance of descriptive excellence of another kind occurs in the representation of a tempest with all its horrours of accumulated distress.

——" There arose even with the sun a vail of dark
" clouds before his face, which shortly, like ink poured into
" water, had blacked over all the face of heaven; preparing
" as it were a mournful stage for a tragedy to be played
" on. For forthwith the winds began to speak louder, and,
" as in a tumultuou kingdom, to think themselves fittest
" instruments of commandment; and blowing whole storms
" of hail and rain upon them, they were sooner in danger,
" than they could almost bethink themselves of change.
" For then the traiterous sea began to swell in pride against
" the afflicted navy, under which, while the heaven
" favoured them, it had lain so calmly; making mountains

Digitized by Google

" of itself, over which the tossed and tottering ship should " climb, to be straight carried down again to a pit of " hellish darkness, with such cruel blows against the sides " of the ship, that, which way soever it went, was still in " his malice, that there was left neither power to stay nor " way to escape. And shortly had it so dissevered the " loving company, which the day before had tarried " together, that most of them never met again, but were " swallowed up in his never-satisfied mouth (7)."

THE classic reader will be highly gratified with those frequent and happy allusions to the writings of antiquity, which he will meet with in the ARCADIA. The noble author has beautified and enriched his mother-tongue by the introduction and proper use of compound epithets: such as Hymen's *saffron-coloured* coat—*false-hearted* life—*death-threatening* trumpet—*eye-pleasing* colour of green—*many-headed* tyranny—*double-shining* day—*rosy-moistened* lips—*heavenly-dewed* tongue—*honey-flowing* eloquence—*rose-enamelled* skies—*heart-ravishing* knowledge—*death-bringing* sin.

THIS subject cannot be dismissed without noticing the severe charge brought against King Charles I. for the adapt-

(7) Arcadia, B. ii.

Digitized by Google

ation of a prayer, almost literally transcribed out of this work, to his own great and urgent necessities (8). A copy of it is declared to have been taken from Dr. Juxon, Bishop of London, along with other papers that were delivered by the King to that prelate, when he attended his Majesty on the scaffold. In the story of Pamela is presented to us a picture of virtue in distress, of afflicted innocence suffering under the pressure of grievous captivity. She was all patience, and mild resignation. Her look and countenance

was

(8) "Who would have imagined so little feare in him of the true All-seeing Deity, "so little reverence of the Holy Ghost, whose office it is to dictate and present our "Christian prayers, so little care of truth in his last words, or honor to himself, or to "his friends, or sense of his afflictions, or that sad hower which was upon him, as im- "mediately before his death to popp into the hand of that grave bishop who attended "him, as a special relique of his saintly exercises, a prayer stolen word for word "from the mouth of a heathen woman praying to a heathen god; and that in no "serious book, but in the vain amatorious poem of Sir Philip Sidney's Arcadia; a book "in that kind full of mirth and witty, but among religious thoughts and duties not "worthy to be named, nor to be read at any time without good caution: much less in "time of trouble and affliction to be a Christian prayer-book."

Milton's Iconoclastes, 1st. edit. p. 12.

Again, when Milton speaks of King Charles quoting, or, as he expresses himself, borrowing passages out of David's psalms, he adds, "such kind of borrowing as this, "if it be not bettered by the borrower, among good authors is called plagiarie. How- "ever this was more tolerable than Pammela's prayer stolen out of Sir Philip."

Ib. p. 191.

Digitized by Google

was settled, her pace soft, and almost still of one measure, without any passionate gesture or violent motion; till at length, as it were, awaking and strengthening herself: "Well," said she, "this is the best, and of this I am sure, "that however they wrong me, they cannot overmaster "God. No darkness blinds his eyes: no gaol bars him "out. To whom else then should I flie, but to him for "succour? And therewith kneeling down she thus said:

"O All-seeing Light, and eternal Life of all things, to "whom nothing is either so great, that it may resist; or so "smal that it is contemned: look upon my misery with "thine eye of mercy, and let thine infinite power vouch-"safe to limit out som proportion of deliverance unto "mee, as to thee shall seem most convenient. Let not "injury, O Lord, triumph over mee, and let my faults by "thy hand bee corrected, and make not mine unjust "enemy the minister of thy justice. But yet, my God, if, "in thy wisdom, this bee the aptest chastisement for my "inexcusable folly; if this low bondage bee fittest for my "over-high desires; if the pride of my not enough humble "heart bee thus to bee broken, O Lord, I yield unto thy "will, and joyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt have "mee suffer. Only thus much let mee crave of thee (let

Digitized by Google

" my craving, O Lord, bee accepted of thee (since even " that proceeds from thee) let me crave even by the noblest " title, which in my greatest affliction I may give myself, " that I am thy creature, and by thy goodness (which is " thyself) that thou wilt suffer som beam of thy majestie so " to shine into my minde, that it may still depend " confidently on thee. Let calamity bee the exercise, but " not the overthrow of my virtue: let their power prevail, " but prevail not to destruction: let my greatness bee their " prey: let my pain bee the sweetness of their revenge: let " them (if so it seem good unto thee) vex mee with more " and more punishment. But, O Lord, let never their " wickedness have such a hand, but that I may carry a " pure minde in a pure body! And pausing a while,—And " O most gracious Lord, said shee, whatever becoms of me, " preserv the virtuous Musidorus (9)."

THE

(9) This prayer is not addressed to a mere heathen deity, as Mr. Toland asserts, but to that Being " whom no darkness hides, and whom no gaol bars out," to him who is light itself.

And never but in unapproached light
Dwelt from eternity. *Milton's P. L. B. iii. 3.*

O all-seeing Light.—All-seeing God. *P. L. B. x. 6.*

See " Appendix No. iv."

Digitized by Google

THE reader will not be displeased with the continuation of this interesting narrative. " The prayer sent to heaven " from so heavenly a creature, with such a fervent grace, " as if devotion had borrowed her body to make of itself a " most beautiful representation, with her eyes so lifted the " skie-ward, that one would have thought they had to fly " thitherward to take their place among their fellow-stars, " her naked hands raising up their whole length, and, as it " were, kissing one another, as if the right hand had been " the picture of zeal, and the left of humbleness, which " both united to make their suits acceptable."

THE prayer itself is a fine composition, and, by adopting the few corrections which it hath undergone from the royal pen, may without impropriety be admitted into the closet. In fact, the numerous sectaries, which, in the time of the grand rebellion, disturbed the peace and ultimately destroyed the constitution of the church of England, uniformly opposed set and prescribed forms of prayer. Hence the incomparable book of meditations, soliloquies, and prayers, so happily accommodated to the situation of their much-injured sovereign, could not escape their obloquy. As they had in vain attempted to suppress his writings, it was their principal object to depreciate the value of them.

Digitized by Google

It hath been further observed, that this prayer was surreptitiously printed and inserted in the works of the royal martyr by Milton and Bradshaw, to bring scandal upon the King. But whatever opinion may be formed of the political conduct of our immortal poet, the integrity of his moral character precludes us from suspecting him to be capable of so illiberal an artifice. Yet the remark of a very discerning writer is not undeserving of notice. "The "papers, which the King gave to Dr. Juxon on the "scaffold, the regicides took away, so that they were at "least the publishers of this prayer; and Dr. Birch, who had "examined the question with great care, was inclined to "think them forgers. The use of it by adaptation was "innocent; and they who could so noisily censure it, "with a little extention of their malice could contrive "what they wanted to accuse (1)."

Basil Kennet, the Biographer of the Greek poets, has given a short but just critique on the Arcadia of Sir Philip Sidney. He agrees with Mr. Dryden in acknowledging the excellencies, which distinguish Theocritus from

(1) See "Dr. Johnson's Works," Vol. ix. p. 108.—In the first edition of the Εικων Βασιλικη printed in 1648, and now before me, this prayer is not inserted, nor is it found in Dr. Earl's Latin version, printed abroad in 1649.

Digitized by Google

from all other poets. The persons, whom the Sicilian poet introduces, speak like shepherds, in that old Doric phrase which seems to have been used on purpose for these compositions. In the pastorals of Virgil and other succeeding poets, we not only meet with the speech, but " with the " address and carriage of gentlemen. Their love is the " brightest gallantry. Our own incomparable Sir Philip " Sidney has fallen into the common humour, though not " into the common fault. Some of his shepherds talk in as " fine a strain of sense and elegancy, as if each was a " true Philisides, shewing wits, as Palladius observed, that " might better become such shepherds as Homer speaks of, " who are governors of the people, than such shepherds " who hold their council in a sheep-cote (2). But then " with what judgment has that noble author framed a " necessity for his practice? The old epique poets, when " their heroes accomplish any adventure that seems placed " beyond the reach of human force, solve the probability " by joining the miraculous interposition of the gods. " And Sir Philip, when his rural lovers act and talk above " the nature and character of the common inhabitants of " the plains, refers the whole business to the extraor-

(2) Arcadia, p. 14.

Digitized by Google

" dinary influence of heaven. He is careful to let us know " that the particular favour of Providence had not more " distinguished his Arcadia from other countries by the " benefits of the climate and of the soil, than by the parts " and the wisdom of the people; and that these were as " common blessings as the others." " The Muses having " chosen this country for their chief repairing place, and " having bestowed their gifts so largely here, that the very " shepherds had their fancies lifted to so high conceits, as " the learned of other nations were content both to borrow " their names, and to imitate their cunning (3)."

Mr. Robert Sidney was now upon his travels. His eldest brother always discovered the most affectionate attention to his welfare, to his health, and to his improvement in every accomplishment of mind and body, that became a gentleman. Among the Sidney papers is a letter from him, replete with kind and tender admonitions—with directions that proceed not from the harshness and severity of rigid authority. They are rather the dictates of wisdom, suggested by a mind early nurtured in the school of virtue. He assures him with all the glow and energy of fraternal

affec-

(3) Arcadia, p. 9.—*See Kennet's Lives of the Greek Poets.*

Digitized by Google

affection, of his readiness to supply him with money. He adds, "there is nothing I spend so pleaseth me, as that "which is for you. If ever I have ability, you will find "it; if not, yet shall not any brother living be better "beloved than you of me." He exhorts him to exercise his greatest expense, when he is in Italy, upon worthy men, and not upon his domestic establishment—to look to his diet, and to hold up his heart in courage and virtue—to cultivate the friendship of Mr. Savile (4) and Mr. Nevell (5),

two

(4) Afterward the celebrated Sir Henry Savile. While he was fellow of Merton College, in Oxford, he was in 1575, elected proctor of the university, and executed the office two years together. He travelled soon after into France and other countries, and at his return was appointed tutor to Queen Elizabeth for the Greek tongue. Under his instruction her Majesty attained to an extraordinary proficiency in Greek and Latin literature. It is not so well known, that she devoted no small part of her time to the study of the scriptures. This we learn from her own words: "I walk many "times in the pleasant fields of the holie scriptures, when I pluck up the goodlisome "herbs of sentences by pruning them, eat them by reading, digest them by musing, "and laie them up at length in the hie seat of memory, by gathering them together, "that so, having tasted their sweetnes, I may less perceive the bitterness of life."

MS. in the Bodleian Library.

(5) "I heare you are fallen into concert and fellowship with Sir Harry Nevill's "son, and one Mr. Savill. I hear of singular virtues of them both. I am glad of "your familiarity with them."

Sir Henry Sidney's letter to his son Robert Sidney, March 25, 1578.

Of Mr. Alexander Nevyle, see Warton's History of English Poetry, vol. iii. p. 384.

Digitized by Google

two young persons of high birth and great expectances. He recommends to him a plan of historical study—an accuracy in the knowledge of the series of times, as elucidated in the Chronologies of Melancthon (6), Lanquit (7), and others—the order in which the Greek historians, should be read. He discriminates the provinces of the historian, the orator, and the poet. Having advised him to treasure up in a commonplace-book or table of remembrance, whatever is worthy of notice in the course of his reading, "be it wittie words of which *Tacitus* is full, "sentences of which *Livy*, or similitudes whereof *Plutarch*," he proceeds, "My dear brother, take delight in the "mathematicall. Mr. Savile is excellent in them. I "think you understand the sphere. If you do, I care little "for any more astronomy in you. Arithmetic and "geo-

(6) Melancthon's Treatise on Chronology is a Work of great merit. An improved edition of it was printed at Geneva, 1625, under the following title.

"Chronicon Carionis, expositum et auctum multis et veteribus et recentibus "historiis, in descriptionibus regnorum et gentium antiquarum et narrationibus "rerum ecclesiasticarum et politicarum, &c. A Philippo Melancthone et Casparo "Peucero."

(7) Thomas Lanquit, who died in 1545 at the age of twenty-four years, began an abbreviation of Chronicles, but brought it no lower than the birth of Christ. See "Nicholson's English historical Library."

Digitized by Google

" geometry I would wish you well seen in, so as both " in matter of number and measure you might have a " feeling and active judgment. I wish you did beare the " mechanicall instruments, wherein the Dutch excel. I " write this to you, as one that for myself have given over " the delight in the world, but wish to you as much if not " more than to myself. So that you can speak or write " Latin not barbarously, I never require great study in " Ciceronianisme, the chief abuse of Oxford, *qui, dum verba* " *sectantur, res ipsas negligunt.*"

He adds, " Now, sweet brother, take a delight to keep " and increase your musick. You will not believe what a " want I find of it in my melancholy times." He proceeds with an agreeable raillery upon himself. " I would by the " way your worship would learn a better hand. You " write worse than I; and I write evil enough: once again " have a care of your diet, and consequently your com- " plexion.

" Gratior est veniens in pulchro corpore virtus."

He concludes his letter with suggesting some rules for arriving at excellence in those exercises, which were then deemed absolutely necessary for a gentleman. " When " you play at weapons, I would have you get thick caps

Digitized by Google

" and brasers, and play out your play lustily; for indeed
" tickes and dalliances are nothing in earnest, for the time
" of the one and the other greatly differs, and use as well
" the blow as the thrust; it is good in itself, and besides
" exerciseth your breath and strength, and will make you a
" strong man at the Tourney and Barriers. First in any
" case practise the single sword, and then with the dagger.
" Let no day pass without an hour or two such exercise;
" the rest study and confer diligently; and so shall you
" come home to my comfort and credit. Lord how I have
" babled: once again, farewell, dearest brother."

These emanations of the pen, in the artless freedom of epistolary intercourse, fully disclose the native goodness of his heart. Nor were they ineffectual. Mr. Robert Sidney was not unworthy of his virtuous ancestry. While he was abroad, his engaging manners and an excellent genius, resembling that of his brother, engaged the affection of Languet, who for three months had narrowly observed his behaviour. Through his advice he was placed under the instruction of able preceptors at Strasburg, in the house of Johannes Sturmius (8), the Cicero of Ger-

(8) See "the Life of Sturmius, in Melchior Adami," and an account of his works in "Morhof's Poly-histor."

Digitized by Google

Germany, and the friend of Roger Ascham, and known to the learned world by his dissertations upon various subjects of classic erudition. Hence he afterwards distinguished himself by his great and noble qualities. His wisdom and prudence in negotiations, his courage and military skill displayed in the Low Countries, justly raised him to the highest honours. He behaved so gallantly at the battle of Zutphen, that his uncle the Earl of Leicester knighted him on the seventh day of October, 1586. On the accession of King James I. to the throne of England. he was advanced to the dignity of a Baron of the realm, by the title of Lord Sidney, Baron of Penshurst, in Kent. Having been created Viscount L'Isle, in 1605, he was promoted in 1618, to the Earldom of Leicester. His happiness in domestic life is beautifully pourtrayed by Ben Jonson; and the reader will not be displeased with the poet's description of the care and assiduity, with which his children were instructed in the lessons of piety and virtue.

" They are and have been taught religion: Thence
" Their gentler spirits have suck'd innocence.
" Each morne and even they are taught to pray
" With the whole household, and may every day
" Reade in their vertuous parents noble parts,
" The mysteries of manners, armes, and arts."

The Forrest, ii.

Digitized by Google

Is it not to be deeply lamented, that Philip Sidney, the third Earl of Leicester, of the name of Sidney, and a lineal descendant of this nobleman, should degrade his high birth by engaging in the rebellion against his lawful sovereign? He adhered to the regicides after the murder of Charles I. became one of Cromwell's council of twenty-one persons, and dishonoured himself by sitting in the parliament in 1657, with men of the lowest parentage, with mean and obscure mechanics (9).

Of Thomas the third and youngest son of Sir Henry Sidney little is known, except that he chose a military life, and was promoted to the rank of a colonel. Stowe classes him among those "very valiant soldiers and men "of command," who adorned the reign of Elizabeth. He survived his eldest brother, whose funeral he attended as one of the six assistants to the principal mourner (1).

Though Mr. Sidney had never engaged himself in any military enterprize, yet the fame of his personal bravery and extraordinary talents was not limited to his native

island.

(9) He was the brother of Algernon Sidney, and of Lady Dorothy Sidney,

(1) See "Stowe's Chronicle," p. 806.

Digitized by Google

island. The throne of Portugal became vacant in 1579, by the demise of Henry V. son of that Emanuel, who was called the Fortunate Prince, and whose reign was emphatically denominated the Golden Reign. Upon his decease without issue, seven competitors presented themselves. Of these, Don Antonio, Prior of Crato, a native of Portugal, and a natural son of Louis, who was a younger son of Emanuel, and brother to the late King, was most formidable to the power of Spain. Being proclaimed King by the populace, he assumed the title, as if he had legally obtained it from the states of the kingdom (2). This prince in 1581, solicited the assistance of Mr. Sidney. Having informed him of the state of his affairs, and named several of his adherents, in a letter wherein he subscribes himself, "*the King*," he concludes with this fine compliment; "Though many more should join me, if I did not "see you in the company, I should say my numbers are "not complete." This application was disregarded. The Queen manifested great coolness and indifference in the cause of Don Antonio, who had no just claim to the crown, and in his attempts to ensure success, gave no proofs either of fortitude or prudence. Having in vain endeavoured

to

(2) Revolutions de Portugal, p. 21.

Digitized by Google

to contest his title, he retired to England in 1581, and afterward died of grief at Paris. Philip II. seized upon Portugal, which remained in subjection to the Kings of Spain until 1640, when John Duke of Braganza, was elected King by the Portuguese.

The parliamentary history of the year 1581, is enriched by an eloquent speech, which Sir Walter Mildmay, then chancellor of the exchequer, delivered in the house of commons. Having previously remarked that the Queen, at the beginning of her reign, did loosen her people from the yoke of Rome, and did restore unto this realm the most pure and holy religion of the gospel, which was for a time overshadowed with Popery, he expatiated upon the different attempts that had been made by the Pope, and his combination with other monarchies and princes devoted unto Rome, to root out the religion of the gospel in all places; and having particularly characterized the Jesuits, he concluded with a motion "to enact such laws as would "secure the kingdom against the Pope and his adherents." A committee was appointed for this purpose, composed of all the privy council of the house, and other gentlemen. In this committee we observe the name of Mr. Philip Sidney, who was then one of the knights for the county of

Digitized by Google

Kent. To the exertions of these legislators we owe those wise and necessary provisions, which contributed to preserve this realm from the dangers that threatened it (3).

In this year the proposal of the marriage with the Duke of Anjou was renewed with much earnestness. An embassy consisting of Francis of Bourbon, Prince of Daupliné, Arthur Cosse, Marshal of France, and others the first of the French nobility, was sent into England, where they were most honourably entertained. The reign of chivalry was far from being extinct. The trumpet's voice calling to arms—the throng of knights and barons bold,

> " With store of ladies, whose bright eyes
> " Rain influence and judge the prize,"

the suspended trophy—the floating banners—the shout of triumphs—all these objects enkindled in the youthful breast the sparks of military ambition. Justings, barrier, and tourney " were exhibited within a spacious edifice at " Westminister, richly and royally furnished. The Earl " of Arundel, Lord Windsor, Mr. Philip Sidney, and " Mr. Fulke Greville, challenged all comers. These " champions called themselves the foster children of desire, " laying

(3) See the Journals of the House of Commons, fol. vol. 1. pp. 119, 120.

Digitized by Google

" laying claim to the castle or fortress of perfect beauty. The splendour and magnificence, which they displayed, were peculiarly pleasing to the Queen, who at all times, and even in trifling matters, delighted in ornament and show. Hollinshed's description of the commencement of this gorgeous spectacle will not be ungrateful to many readers. Let them figure to themselves an assemblage of every thing beauteous, cheerful, and gay in the English court. Placed in imagination on the seats within this widely-extended dome, let them view the four gallant knights advancing to the combat in slow and solemn procession;

" FIRST the Earle of Arundell entered the tilt-yard, all in " gilt and engraven armour, with caparisons and furniture " richlie and bravelie imbrodered, having attendant upon " him two gentlemen ushers, foure pages riding on foure " spare horsses, and twentie of his gentlemen. All which " aforesaid were apparelled in short clokes and Venetian " hose of crimson velvet, laid with gold lace, doublets of " yellow sattin, hats of crimson velvet with gold bands and " yellow feathers, and yellow silke stockes. Then had " he six trumpetters, that sounded before him, and one " and thirtie yeomen that waited after him apparelled

Digitized by Google

" in cassocke coats and Venetian hose of crimson velvet,
" laid on with red silke and gold lace, doublets of yellow
" taffitie, hats of crimson taffitie, with yellow feathers and
" yellow worsted stockings.

" AFTER him proceeded the Lord Windsore in gilt and
" engraven armour, with caparisons and furniture, richlie
" imbrodered with gold, having attendant on him foure
" pages, riding on foure spare horsses, and foure and
" twentie gentlemen, all apparelled in short cloaks of
" scarlet, lined through with orange tawnie taffatie, and
" laid about with silver lace, doublets of orange tawnie
" sattin, Venetian hose of orange tawnie velvet, black
" velvet caps, with silver bands and white feathers, and
" silvered rapiers and daggers, with scabbards of blacke
" velvet; foure trumpetters, and two footmen in cassocke
" coats and Venetian hose of orange tawnie velvet, and
" black velvet caps with silver bands and white feathers,
" foure grooms of his stable leading of his foure horsses,
" in cassocke coats and Venetian hose of orange tawnie
" taffitie and orange tawnie felts with silver bands and
" white feathers. Then had he threescore yeomen in coats
" of orange tawnie cloth, with the unicorne of silver plate
" on their sleeves, and orange tawnie felts with silver
" bands and white feathers.

Digitized by Google

" THEN proceeded Maister Philip Sidneie, in verie " sumptuous manner, with armour, part blew, and the rest " gilt and engraven, with foure spare horsses, having " caparisons and furniture verie rich and costlie, as some of " cloth of gold imbrodered with pearle, and some " imbrodered with gold and silver feathers, verie richlie " and cunninglie wrought: he had foure pages that rode on " his foure spare horsses, who had cassocke coats and " Venetian hose, all of cloth of silver, laied with gold lace, " and hats of the same with gold bands and white feathers, " and ech one a paire of white buskins. Then had he " thirtie gentlemen and yeomen, and foure trumpetters " who were all in cassock coats, and Venetian hose of " yellow velvet laied with silver lace, yellow velvet caps " with silver bands and white feathers, and everie one " a pare of white buskins; and they had upon their coats a " scrowle or band of silver, which came scarfe-wise over " the shoulder, and so down under the arme, with this " posie or sentence written upon it, both before and behind, " *'sic nos non nobis.'*

" THEN came Maister Fulke Grevill, in gilt armour, with " rich and fair caparisons and furniture, having foure spare " horsses with foure pages riding upon them, and foure

Digitized by Google

" trumpetters sounding before him, and twentie gentlemen " and yeomen attending upon him, who with pages and " trumpetters were all apparelled in loose jirkins of tawnie " taffatie cut and lined with yellow sarsenet, and laied " with gold lace, and cut downe the arme, and set with " loopes and buttons of gold, Venetian hose of the same, " lined, (as aforesaid,) laied with gold lace downe the side " with loopes and buttons of gold, with ech a pair of " yellow worsted stockings, and hats of tawnie taffatie with " gold bands and yellow feathers. Having thus all " entered the tilt-yard, they proceeded with the rowling " trench before them, which staied against the queene, and " they passed by as though they would behold the fortresse " of beautie, and so went about the tilt (4)."

THE Duke of Anjou afterward came into England, and was most graciously received by the Queen. She conde-

scended

(4) A tract is reprinted in the second volume of Nicholls's " Progresses of Queen " Elizabeth, &c." under the title of " A brief declaration of the shews, devices, " speeches, and inventions done and performed before the Queen's Majestie and the " French Ambassadours, at the most valiant and worthy triumph, attempted and " executed on the Munday and Tuesday in Whitson-week, Anno 1580. Collected " and gathered, penned and published by Henry Goldwell, Gent."

Digitized by Google

scended to accept presents from him (5). On that festal day on which she celebrated the anniversary of her accession to the throne, she drew a ring from her finger in the presence of her courtiers, and put it on that of her royal lover. This ceremony was interpreted by the surrounding spectators, as a solemn engagement or contract of marriage on her part. Nay, she took up her pen to subscribe her name to the marriage deed, but she proceeded no further. Those of her subjects who were present, were seized with consternation. Leicester, Walsingham, and others of her Privy Counsellors exclaimed that the Queen, her whole kingdom, and Religion itself, were irrecoverably ruined. The ladies, and maids of honour, who usually attended her, burst into tears, and into the most affecting expressions of sorrow. Thus alarmed and terrified, she enjoyed no repose that night. The next day, the medal was reversed, and the rejected lover had only to lament his own disappointment,

——— reproaching

(5) Presents given by him to Queen Elizabeth at New Year's tide in 1582, were

"First, a shekyll of golde with these words graven,

"Serviet eternum quem dulcis torquet ELIZA.

And a padlocke of gold hanging by a little cheyne of golde, given by Mounseur.

Item, more, a flower of golde, garnished with sparkes of rubyes and diamonds, and a hynde sitting on it with two lytle perles pendente, given also by Mounseur."

Nicholls's Progresses, &c.

Digitized by Google

reproaching in bitter language the levity of women, and the caprice and inconstancy of islanders (6).

NOTHING was more irresolute than the Queen at this time. Walsingham complains of this in a letter to the Lord Treasurer. "When her Majesty is pressed to marry, then "she seemeth to affect a league; and when a league is "yielded to, then she liketh better of a marriage. And "when thereupon she is moved to assent to marriage, then "she hath recourse to the league: when the motion for the "league or any request is made for money, then her "Majesty returneth to marriage." He observed that this conduct did minister unto the secretaries of foreign princes matter of discourse, greatly to her dishonour, and to the extreme grief of those that were acquainted with it (7).

IN

(6) Mr. Camden's accuracy has been questioned, and it is suggested that no quarrel ever subsisted between the Queen and the French Prince. It appears from a sonnet said to be composed by her, as well as from a letter written by Lord Talbot to the Earl of Shrewsbury, that her Majesty was greatly distressed at the departure of her lover, consoling herself with the promise of his return. But it should be remembered that the rupture took place in November, 1581, and that the prince continued in England till the February following. During this interval he partook of the festivities and amusements of the English court. Is it not probable that the civilities which passed between them might cause a renewal of a negotiation with a prospect of its being terminated to their mutual satisfaction?

(7) See "Digges's Complete Ambassador," p. 408.

Digitized by Google

In the mean time the French prince having spent three months in England, urging his suit without effect, at length prepared to return into the Netherlands. The Queen conducted him to Canterbury: and by her command, the Earl of Leicester, Lords Hunsdon, Howard, and others of the nobility, with Mr. Philip Sidney, Sir Walter Raleigh, and a numerous train of attendants, accompanied him to Antwerp, where the States bound themselves by an oath of allegiance to him, when he assumed his sovereignty over them, amidst the joy and acclamation of his new subjects. His future conduct was sullied by many acts of perfidy and ingratitude, so that the Queen had great reason to congratulate herself on her final resolution not to contract a marriage, which, instead of affording her the enjoyment of domestic tranquillity and happiness, would have proved an endless source of disquietude, distress, and misery (8).

In

(8) See in "Anderson's History of Great Britain," vol. 1. 8vo, p. 107, a poem subscribed "*Eliza Regina*, upon Mount Zear's departure," beginning thus:

"I grieve, but dare not show my discontent.
"I love, and yet am forc'd to seem to hate."

"The departure was mournful between her Highness and Munsure; she lothe to "let him gowe, and he as lothe to depart. Her Matie on her return will be longe "in

Digitized by Google

In 1581 Mr. Sidney attended the Earls of Leicester and Pembroke, along with others of the nobility, to the university of Oxford, to be present at the academical exercises which were then performed. Among the various entertainments prepared for these illustrious visitors, a Latin tragedy entitled MELEAGER, and written by Mr. William Gager, a student of Christ Church, was acted by the scholars in the refectory of that College. The learning and virtues of this writer were highly esteemed by Mr. Sidney. A copy of this tragedy, printed in 1592, and presented by the author to the celebrated Dr. John Raynolds, with a letter containing a defence of theatrical exhibitions, gave rise to a controversy between them, similar to that which in the succeeding century commenced between Mr. Jeremy Collier and Mr. Congreve, Sir John Van-

---

" in no place in w^ch she loged as she went, neither wyll she cum to White-Haule, " because the places shall not give cause of remẽbrance to her of him w^th whom " she so unwyllinglie parted. Munsure promised his returne in March."

Extract from a letter from Lord Talbot, to the Earl of Shrewsbury, Feb. 12, 1581-2. *See " the Progresses of Queen Elizabeth," vol. ii.*

The real character of this prince was truly expressed by his sister Margaret Queen of Navarre, that " if fraud and cruelty were to be banished from the earth, " there was in him a stock sufficient from which it might be soon replenished."

Watson's History of Philip II. of Spain.

Digitized by Google

Vanburgh and other dramatic poets, occasioned by his "Short View of the Immorality and Prophaneness of the "English Stage."

HUBERT LANGUET died on the last day of September, 1581. When he accompanied Prince Casimir into England, in 1579, merely to gratify himself with the conversation of Mr. Sidney, with the sight of that plant which he had carefully and tenderly nurtured, he was honoured with a very kind and respectful attention from his friends (9). "Their humanity towards me," saith he, "hath almost restored me to health." He who had seen all the countries of Europe, and was thoroughly acquainted with their different forms of government, having remarked that the English then enjoyed the blessings of peace, adds this singular encomium. "I have nothing more to write "concerning them, than that they are by far the happiest "nation in Christendom (1)." The same sentiments were

enter-

(9) A particular account of this visit is given by Languet himself, in two letters to his illustrious friend the Elector of Saxony; the one dated at London, on the last day of January, the other at Dover, on the seventeenth day of February, 1579.

(1) Languet in one of his letters, calls England—"beatam Angliam, tanquam "domicilium quietis et humanitatis."——*Ep. xciv.*

Digitized by Google

entertained by Lambertus Danæus, who frequently expressed his desire to spend his days in England, "that "most happy country, the seat of peace and piety, "through the Divine Favour, and the wise government "of that phœnix of the world, the excellent Queen "Elizabeth, the most compassionate mother of the poor "French, and the hospitaliere of all the children of "God (2)."

WHAT has been said of Languet, cannot fail of commanding the tribute of just praise due to his memory. Indeed the history of his life would be the history of the learning and policy of Europe for near half a century: as none of his rank in society had a more powerful influence on the direction of public affairs: while his mind was richly adorned with all the graces of elegant literature. If he surpassed his contemporaries in any particular talent, it was in a quick and discerning faculty of discovering the tempers and inclinations of those with whom he conversed. The loss of almost all his friends, cut off in one moment on the fatal evening of the twenty-fourth day of August, 1572, left an incurable wound on his heart, so that he considered

life

(2) "Birch's Memoirs of Queen Elizabeth," vol. 1. p. 87.

Digitized by Google

life itself as more miserable than death. And this is no uncommon case. On a great and generous mind the impressions of sorrow are not easily obliterated, while with the bulk of mankind they are slight and transient, like the vestiges of a bird walking on the sand of the sea-shore. He died at Antwerp, and was interred with great funeral solemnity, the Prince of Orange preceding the train that attended him to the grave. During his last illness, he was visited by Madam du Plessis, who soothed the anguish of his dying moments by her presence and tender care of him (3). He declared to her a short time before his death, that his desire of living was founded solely on the hopes which he had entertained, that there would be a reformation of manners in the world; but, as he saw men growing worse, he quitted life without a murmur. Nothing distressed him more than his regret at not seeing Monsieur du Plessis before he died. Having been instrumental in rescuing him from the Parisian tragedy, he received him into the inmost recesses of friendship. His last request was, that Du Plessis would mention him in his next work. This request, arising from the love of virtuous fame, was most

readily

(3) Of the exemplary piety, the charity, and other virtues of this amiable lady, see "Histoire de la vie de Messire Philippes de Mornay," pp. 31, 323.

Digitized by Google

readily complied with; and in the preface to the first edition of the Latin version of the treatise "Of the Truth "of the Christian Religion," he is thus commemorated: "All who knew Hubert Languet, and he was known over "all Christendom, lamented his death. I regretted it "particularly, having always revered him as a parent. "When I recovered from the stupour, in which this event "involved me, the passage in Isaiah recurred to my "remembrance; *The righteous perisheth, and no man layeth "it to heart, and merciful men are taken away, none considering "that the righteous are taken away from the evil to come.* Few in "our age will inquire into the real character of Languet, "because most men know it: but all men ought to know "it, as he consulted the good of all, and of posterity in "particular; of whose interest none was more studious. "I will speak the sentiments of my heart, and what is "literally true. In this man learning contended with "piety; knowledge with conscience; art with nature; "experience with instruction. No one knew the world "better; and from his view of the world, he had learned "the contempt of it. No one had more opportunities of "surveying the manners of men. In that variety of "multifarious learning, which he possessed, the simplicity "of his manners was the subject of universal admiration.

Digitized by Google

" In short, he was in reality what many wished to appear " to be: he lived as the best of men desired to die. His " most exemplary life was terminated by a most exemplary " death:—a death in Christ most happy, and approaching " the nearest to a most happy life, crowned him with " praise and glory. I certainly, and it is the only thing " which remains for me, will regard his memory, as long " as I live; and this my book will renew the remembrance " of him as long as I live."

If to be praised by them who are most praise-worthy be desirable, we may be permitted to felicitate Hubert Languet on this account (4). Erasmus, Buchanan, Melancthon, Thuanus, Gerard Vossius, Joachim Camerarius, the first and most enlightened scholars of the sixteenth century, have concurred in giving a full and incontrovertible testimony to his exalted merit. His surviving friends erected a monument to him at Antwerp, as a public mark

of

(4) Lætus sum laudari me, inquit Hector, opinor apud Nævium, abs te pater, laudato viro.——*Cicero.*

Of Hubert Languet, see " Memoirs of Literature," Vol. iv. p. 105, and " Memoirs of Thomas Hollis, Esquire," p. 547.

Digitized by Google

of their regard for his many amiable qualities—for the elegance of his manners—his singular erudition, and above all, for his greatness of mind, his wisdom, and his piety—virtues, which he displayed, not only in his life-time, but at his death (5).

It will redound to his honour, that Languet seized every opportunity of reminding Mr. Sidney, that the remembrance of his noble descent should always instigate him to obtain pre-eminence. He seems to have been of the same opinion with Castiglione, who asserts, that "it is much less "disgraceful for a person of mean descent to be deficient "in the exercise of virtuous actions, than for one of noble "parentage, who, if he deviates from the path of his "ancestors, contaminates the name of his family, and doth "not only not make any new acquisition, but loses what "he has already acquired." "Nobility," adds this lively writer, "is a bright lamp which discovers and renders "conspicuous good and bad actions, which inflames and incites

(5) The celebrated work entitled, "Bruti (Stephani Junii) vindiciæ contra tyrannos, &c. Edinb. 1579," is attributed to Languet, although Beza, Du Plessis, and Hottoman, have been named as the authors of it It contains some severe strictures on the arbitrary power of kings, and is said to have been burnt in England by the common executioner.

Digitized by Google

" incites to virtue as well through the fear of infamy as " the hope of praise. This splendour of nobility not bring- " ing to light the actions of those who are of low extraction, " they want an incitement to honour, they fear no disgrace, " nor do they hold themselves obliged to surpass their fore- " fathers, whilst those who are of an illustrious lineage " blame themselves, if they do not at least equal their " ancestors (6)." It would be unpardonable not to mention one particular trait in the character and conduct of this extraordinary man. The shortness and uncertainty of human life impressed him with a due sense of the value of time. The syren Sloth had not charms sufficiently powerful to fascinate him. He accustomed himself " to " weigh time even to the utmost grain." It was to him more precious than the gems of India. He had no leisure to waste the hours of life in frivolous pursuits, in nugatory amusements. As soon as he had transacted the public business of his office,—for he was always employed in negotiations and matters of great moment,—he devoted himself to the conversation of learned men on subjects of literature, or to his own private studies. When this was objected to him by his friends, he replied to them in the words of Cicero in his beautiful oration for his venerable

preceptor

(6) " Il Corteggiano," *libro i.*

Digitized by Google

preceptor the poet Archias; " Why should I be ashamed of " myself, who have lived so many years in such a manner " that I have never been drawn from my studies by " interest or leisure—that pleasure has never seduced me " from them, or sleep retarded me? who can censure me, " who can reasonably be angry at me, if I secure to myself " that time for the pursuit of my studies which others " employ in attending to their private concerns, to the " celebration of festal solemnities, to pleasures, to the repose " of their minds and bodies, to social entertainments, " to the dice, or to the manly exercise of the ball?"

In this year (1581) a book of the art of war was printed in 4to, entitled " A compendious Treatise *De re Militari*, concerning the principal orders to be observed in martial affairs: written in the Spanish tongue by that worthy captain Luis Gutierres de la Vega; and newly translated into English by Nicholas Litchfield (7)." " This translation " he dedicated to the worshipful Mr. Philip Sidney, for this " reason, because he found none more forward to further " and favour martial knowledge: being of himself most " ready and adventurous in all exercises of war and " chivalry; and therefore he presumed to dedicate the

" tract

(7) See " Wood's Ath. Ox," Vol. i. c. 213.

Digitized by Google

" tract to him." Litchfield, the translator of this work, is said to have been a brave and experienced soldier.

LORD ORFORD endeavours to impress upon his readers an unfavourable opinion of Sidney's letters, while a writer no less acute, reflecting on the learning and judgment of Languet, believes that he must have seen something very uncommon in Sidney's understanding and abilities to have induced him to correspond with this young man on such interesting subjects as are discussed in his letters. If the other part of this epistolary commerce had been preserved, it would probably have afforded the strongest proofs of Sidney's great aptness and felicity of expression, of the ease, perspicuity, and elegance of his Latin style. What was observed of the orations of Cicero, Languet applied to the letters, which were written to him from this his dearest friend, that the longest gave him the greatest pleasure (8).

MR.

(8) On the superior merit of Sidney's letters Languet often expatiates—" Literæ tuæ " eam testificationem tui erga me amoris continent, et adeo eleganter et ingeniosè sunt " scriptæ, ut me in tui amorem et admirationem facile protrahere potuerint, nisi morum " tuorum suavitas, judicii gravitas, et rerum major peritia quam tua ætas ferre videatur, " id antea præstitissent."..... *Epist. xlv.*

" Dedisti

Digitized by Google

MR. SIDNEY seems at this time to have devoted himself to a studious and contemplative life. The result of his application to learning appeared in a tractate composed by him, under the title of "The Defence of Poesy," which is pronounced to be the first piece of criticism in the English Language, worthy of our attention (9). It shows at once the erudition, judgment, and taste of the author. In it the laws of the drama are described with singular precision and exactness. The lovely simplicity of its language—the ingenuity of just and sound remarks without the

"Dedisti ad me literas sub initium Junii mensis, quibus nullæ mihi unquam fuerunt "magis gratæ: nam visus es mihi in iis teipsum superare ingenio et prudentiâ."....., *Epist. xlvii.*

"Quidam interrogatus quænam ex orationibus Ciceronis viderentur ipsi optimæ, "respondit eas sibi videri optimas, quæ essent longissimæ. Eodem modo judico de tuis "literis."..... *Epist. lxi,*

(9) "Te Musa excoluit, finxit tibi pectora virtus,
"O decus, O patriæ stella (Philippe) tuæ.
"Quid Musis poteras, docuit *Defensio Musæ*,
"Arcadiæ docuit fabrica texta novæ."

In obit. D. Phil. Sidnei, Acad. Cantab. lachrymæ, p. 84.

A small volume was published in 1589, under the title of "The Art of English "Poesie, contrived into three books, &c." without the name of the author, but dedicated to Lord Treasurer Burleigh, by R. F. the initial letters of Richard Fielder, the printer, dwelling in the Black Friers, near Ludgate. This book, which has been attributed

Digitized by Google

the least affectation—the frequent and happy allusions to the best writers of classic antiquity, must always please. He has successfully repelled the attacks made upon his favourite art of poetry by the puritans,

....." that ungracious crew, which feigns demurest grace (1)."

THESE men were the avowed enemies of all learning. They held poetry in the utmost abhorrence: and its professors were denominated by them " the caterpillars of the " commonwealth (2)."

MR.

attributed to Mr. Sidney, was written by Webster Puttenham, one of the Gentlemen Pensioners to the Queen. Previous to this last work " The Discourse of English " Poetry," by William Webb, who translated Virgil's Georgics into English verse, was printed in 1586.

In the last edition of the catalogue of royal and noble authors, Lord Orford says that he has been blamed for not mentioning Sir Philip's Sidney's Defence of Poetry, which some think his best work. His Lordship's excuse is, that he had indeed forgot it, when he wrote the article concerning Sir Philip Sidney; a proof, he adds, that he at least did not think it sufficient foundation for so high a character as he acquired."

Lord Orford's Works, 4to. Vol. i. p. 342.

(1) Spenser's Fairy Queen.

(2) Among many other tracts written by puritanical authors, was one printed in 1579 with this title; " The Schole of Abuse, containing a pleasant invective against " poets, pipers, players, jesters, &c. and such like caterpillars of the common- " wealth, by Ste. Gossen, Stud. Oxon. dedicated to M. Philip Sidney, Esquier."

Digitized by Google

MR. DRYDEN'S knowledge of Aristotle's rules of criticism, comprised in his two treatises on poetry and rhetoric, was derived through the medium of a French translation. Mr. Sidney was conversant in the original works; and a late ingenious editor of this little tract, whose accurate critical discernment cannot be disputed, has justly observed, "that "there are few rules and few excellencies of poetry, "especially epic and dramatic, but what Mr. Sidney has "here pointed out and illustrated with true taste and "judgment, having diligently read the best Latin and "Italian commentators on Aristotle's poetics."

YET Lord Orford seems to have been ignorant of the existence of this work. At least it is unnoticed by him; while he pronounces the severe sentence of condemnation on the writings of Sidney. The author of this tract assigns want of merit as the reason why poets were less esteemed in England than in other countries. This reason no longer exists. The excellency of English poetry, its sweetness, its elegance, its sublimity, have in later ages been fully acknowledged and admired.

A just representation of the transcendent worth of the Book of Psalms, is contained in the following strictures.

Digitized by Google

" And may not I presume a little further, to shew the " reasonableness of this word *Vates*, and say that holy " David's Psalms are a divine poem? If I do, I shall not " do it without the testimony of great learned men, both " antient and modern. But even the name of *Psalms* will " speak for me, which being interpreted, is nothing but " songs: then that it is fully written in metre, as all " learned Hebricians agree, although the rules be not fully " found. Lastly and principally, his handling his pro- " phecy, which is merely poetical. For what else is the " awaking his musical instruments, the often and free " changing of person, his notable prosopopœias, *when he* " *maketh you, as it were, see God coming in his majesty*, his telling " of the *beasts joyfulness and hills leaping*, but a heavenly " poesie; wherein almost he sheweth himself a passionate " lover of that unspeakable and everlasting beauty to be " seen by the eyes of the mind only cleared by truth?"

How lively is his description of the charming sweetness of lyric poetry? " Is it the lyric poet that most displeaseth, " who with his tuned lyre and well accorded verse giveth " praise, the reward of virtue, to virtuous acts? who giveth " moral precepts and natural problems, who sometimes " rayseth up his voice to the height of the heavens, in sing- " ing the lauds of the immortal God. Certainly I must

Digitized by Google

" confess mine own barbarousness: I never heard the old " song of Percie and Douglas, that I found not my heart " moved more than with a trumpet, and yet is it sung by " some blind crowder with no rougher voice than rude " style; which being so evil apparelled in the dust and " cobweb of that uncivil age, what would it not work " in the gorgeous eloquence of Pindar (3)?"

WHAT he has said of our old poets is perfectly correct. " *Chaucer* undoubtedly did excellently in his *Troilus* and " *Creseid* (4): of whom truly I know not whether to marvel " more, either that he in that mystie time could see so " clearly, or that wee in this clear age, go so stumblingly " after him. Yet had he great wants, fit to be forgiven in

" so

(3) Ben Jonson, charmed with the beauties of this old song of Chevy Chace, in which the battle of Otterburn in 1388 is supposed to have been celebrated, was wont to say that he would rather have been the author of that little poem, than of all his own works. A poem, which through the lapse of years, has attained admiration and applause from the learned and unlearned, must be justly entitled to praise.

The ballad, on which there is a beautiful critique in the Spectator, No. 70, and 74, is conjectured to have been written after this eulogium of Mr. Sidney, who probably had in contemplation a poem of an older date which is inserted in Percy's Reliques of Antient English Poetry.

(4) See " Malone's Dryden's Prose Works," Vol. i. p. i. p. 259.

Digitized by Google

" so great an antiquity (5). I account the *Mirror of Magis-*
" *trates* (6), meetly furnished of beautiful parts. And in the
" Earl of *Surrey's Lyrick's* (7), many things tasting of a
" noble birth, and worthy of a noble mind. The *Shepherd's*

" *Kalendar*

(5) " Old Chaucer, like the morning star,
" To us discovers days from far.
" His lights those mists and clouds dissolv'd
" Which our dark nation long involv'd:
" But, he descending to the shades,
" Darkness again invades the age."

Sir John Denham.

(6) This Work was the joint production of Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, and others, his contemporaries, men of the greatest wit in that age.

" The Mirror of Magistrates" is an old-fashioned title to a set of poems which were very much applauded in their time. It consisted of examples of eminent bad men, who had come to miserable ends. The instances were taken here and there from the beginning of our history to later times. Lord Buckhurst wrote the induction, which was to have served for an introduction to the whole: but, as that design was afterwards dropt, it was inserted in the body of the work, just before one of the particular stories written by the same hand. It is very much in Spenser's manner. It abounds in the same sort of descriptions of shadowy beings, and is a good deal in the same style. The first time I read it, says Mr. Spence, these two authors seemed so evidently of the same school (for there are schools of poetry as distinguishable as those in painting) that I immediately concluded Lord Buckhurst might be set down as a scholar of Spenser's; but when I came to compare dates, it appeared that, if one formed

Digitized by Google

" *Kalendar* (8) hath much poetry in his eclogues, indeed " worthy the reading, if I be not deceived. That same " framing of his style to an old rustick language I dare not " allow: since neither *Theocritus* in *Greek*, *Virgil* in *Latin*, " nor *Sannazara* in *Italian*, did effect it. Besides these, I do " not remember to have seen but few, to speak boldly, that " have poetical sinews in them—excepting GORBU-DOCK;

---

formed himself by the other, it must have been Spenser that was a scholar of Lord Buckhurst's." See " Spence's Dedication of Gorboduc to the Earl of Middlesex."

Of " The Mirror of Magistrates," see the last Edition of " Theat. Poet. Angl." pp. 68, 69. " Catalogue of Royal and Noble Authors," Vol. i. p. 147. " Ritson's " Bibliographia Poetica," pp. 121, 242, 244.

(7) Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey, son to Thomas Duke of Norfolk, was the author of several poems inserted in a volume of " Songs and Sonnettes, &c. printed by Richard Tottell, 1557, 4to." He translated " certaine books of Virgile's Æneis;" and particularly " the Fourth Boke of Virgill, in treeting of the love betweene Æneas " and Dido, translated into English, and drawn into a straunge metre." This " straunge metre" is blank verse, of which it is the earliest specimen of that kind in the English Language. In the opinion of Mr. Warton he may be pronounced the first English classical Poet for his justness of thought, correctness of style, and purity of expression. This accomplished nobleman, a victim to the jealousy of King Henry VIII. was beheaded in 1546-7.

(8) This poem, written by Spenser, is " entituled to the noble and virtuous gentle- " man, worthy of all titles both of learning and chivalry, Master PHILIP SIDNEY."

Digitized by Google

" DOCK (9); again I say of those that I have seen, which " notwithstanding, as it is full of stately speeches, and well- " sounding phrases climing to the height of Seneca his " style, and as full of notable moralities, which it doth " most delightfully teach, and so obtain the very end of " poesie: yet in truth it is very defectuous in the circum- " stances, which grieves me, because it might not remain

" as

(9) The three first acts of Ferrex and Porrex, a tragedy in English verse, were written by Thomas Norton, " a forward and busy Calvinist in the beginning of Queen " Elizabeth's reign, who versified twenty-seven of the psalms;" the two last by Thomas Sackville, Esquire, afterward Lord Buckhurst, and Earl of Dorset. A spurious edition of this tragedy appeared in 1565, under the title of Gorboduc, and a genuine edition in 1571. Mr. Spence, when poetry professor at Oxford, republished this tragedy. It is his opinion that the tragedy was written by Lord Buckhurst alone. The defect of which Mr. Sidney complains, is the neglect of the unities of time and place, in violation of the rules laid down by Aristotle. Yet Mr. Rymer finds the fable and structure of it not unworthy of his commendation. He remarks that " Gorboduc " is a fable doubtless better turned for tragedy, than any one on this side the Alps in " that time, and might have been a better direction to Shakespeare and Ben Jonson, " than any guide they have had the luck to follow. Here is a King, a Queen, and " their two sons. The king divides his realm, and gives it betwixt his sons. They " quarrel: the elder brother kills the younger, which provokes the mother to kill the " elder. Thereupon the king kills the mother, and then the people rise and dispatch " old Gorboduc."

But Rymer seems not to have read the tragedy with attention. In fact, the younger brother kills the elder, and the mother kills the younger; and both the King and

Digitized by Google

" as an exact model of tragedies, for it is faultie both in " place and time, the two necessary companions of all " corporal actions."

The violation of the unities in the old English dramatic writers is notorious. He dwells on this circumstance with much festivity and pleasantness in a passage, from which we learn how very imperfect the mechanism of the English stage was at that period. " Where the stage should alway " represent but one place, and the uttermost time proposed " in it should bee both by Aristotle's precepts and common " reason but one day, there are both many days and many

—— " places

and Queen are put to death by their subjects. The tragedy itself has great merit, and Mr. Pope observes, that "the writers of the succeeding age might have improved much " by copying from it a dignity in the sentences, an unaffected perspicuity of style, and " an easy flow in the numbers: in a word, that chastity, correctness, and gravity of " diction, which are so essential to tragedy, and which all tragic poets who followed, not " excepting Shakespeare himself, either little understood or perpetually neglected."

Mr. Dryden, though he has criticised this tragedy, did certainly never read it. He, as well as Oldham, mistook the sex of Gorboduc, and speaks of the tragedy of Queen Gorboduc.

See " Malone's Dryden's Prose Works," Vol. i. P. ii. p. 9. in the prolegomena.— " Catalogue of Royal and Noble Authors," Vol. i. p. 145. " Warton's Edition of " Pope's Works," Vol. viii. p. 485. " Mr. T. Warton's History of English Poetry," Vol. iii. Sect. xlviii.

Digitized by Google

" places inartificially imagined. But if it be so in GOR-
" BUDOCK, how much more in all the rest, and where
" you shall have Asia of the one side, and Affrick of the
" other, and so many other kingdoms, that the plaier
" when he comes in, must ever begin with telling where
" hee is, or else the tale will not be conceived. Now you
" shall have three ladies walk to gather flowers, and then
" wee must believe the stage to be a garden. By and by
" we hear news of shipwrack in the same place, then wee
" are to blame if wee accept it not for a rock. Upon the
" back of that comes out a hideous monster with fire and
" smoke, and then the miserable beholders are bound to
" take it for a cave: while, in the mean time, two armies
" flie in, represented with swords and bucklers: and then
" what hard heart will not receive it for a pitched field?
" Now of time they are much more liberal."

Upon the whole, the reader of this tractate " will no
" longer scorn the sacred mysteries of poesy, or laugh at
" the name of poets, as though they were next inheritors to
" fools: he will no more jest at the reverend title of a
" rhymer, but believe with *Aristotle*, that they were the
" ancient treasures of the *Grecians* divinity; with *Bembus*,
" that they were first bringers in of all civility—with

Digitized by Google

" *Scaliger*, that no philosopher's precepts can sooner make " you an honest man than the reading of Virgil."

THOUGH favoured with the personal esteem of the Queen, Mr. Sidney was not yet promoted to any honourable employment under Government. His uncle the good Earl of Warwick, having signalized himself by his courage and military talents, when commander of his Majesty's forces in Normandy, was preferred to the office of the master of the ordnance (1). Mr. Sidney, desirous of being joined with him in that office, thus solicited the interest of Lord Burleigh.

" TO THE LORD TREASURER.

" RIGHT honourable my singular good Lord. I have from " my childhood been much bound to your L. which, as the " meanness of my fortune keeps me from hability to requite, " so gives it me daily cause to make the bond greater, by " seeking and using your favor towardes me. The Queen at

" my

(1) The fate of this nobleman excites our compassion. He was besieged in the town of Newhaven, in Normandy, by Charles IX. of France. As he stood on the rampier at a parley, he was shot, contrary to the law of arms, with a bullet empoisoned, which consumed his leg: and thereof, after he had lived several years with great pain and impotency, endured his leg to be sawed from his body, and died within a few days, Feb. 20, 1589.

Digitized by Google

" my L. of Warwick's request, hathe bene moved to join " me in his office of ordinance; and, as I learn, her Majestie " yields gratious heering unto it. My suit is, your L. will " favor and furdre it, which I truly affirme unto your L. " I much more desyre for the being busied in a thing " of som serviceable experience, than for any other " commodity, which is but small, that can arise of it. I " conclude your L. trouble with this, that I have no reason " to be thus bold with your L. but the presuming of your " honorable good will towards me, which I cannot deserve, " but I can and will greatly esteem. I humbly take my " leave, and pray for your long and prosperous life. At " Court this 27th of January 1582.

" Your L. most humble at commandment,

" PHILIP SIDNEY."

This application, though urged with great modesty, failed of success.

In 1582 a proposal was made to Sir Henry Sidney to re-assume the administration of Ireland. On the expediency and propriety of accepting this proposal, he consulted the inclinations and interest of his eldest son; from whom he was anxious to obtain a promise that he would go with him thither; and withal that he would put

Digitized by Google

on a determination to remain and continue there after him, and to succeed him in the government, if it might so like her Majesty to allow him. "I will then," says he, "yield "my consent to go; otherwise I will not leave my quiet and "contented life at home, considering my years and the "defects of nature that commonly accompany age, to enter "into so toilsome a place both of body and mind, but only "to leave some memory and worthy mark to posterity." He adds farther, that he expects some badge of public favour—an advancement to the rank of nobility, together with the possession "of some land or fee-farm," with a permission to carry the title of lieutenant rather than deputy (2).

Of the result of this negotiation no account is given, and it remains uncertain whether the inefficacy of it is to be attributed to the unwillingness of Mr. Sidney to accept the terms proposed, or to the Queen's refusal to grant them.

A treaty of marriage had for some years been in agitation between Mr. Sidney, and Penelope the daughter of

——— Walter

(2) Sidney Papers, Vol. i, p. 393.

Digitized by Google

Walter Devereux, Earl of Essex (3). It was the earnest wish and endeavour of Sir Edward Waterhouse, a person of consummate prudence, and the common friend of both families, to bring this treaty to an happy conclusion. In this however he was disappointed. This Lady was married to Robert Lord Rich, who was created Earl of Warwick by King James I. in 1618—a man said to be rough and uncourtly in his manners and conversation.

LANGUET had often and seriously advised his amiable friend to enter into the married state. He had anxiously exhorted him not to follow the example of his royal mistress by preferring a life of celibacy; but to consider the happi-

ness

(3) "All the lords that wish well to the children of the Earl of Essex, and I suppose all the best sorte of the English lords besides, doe expect what will become of "the treaty between Mr. Phillip and my Lady Penelope. Truly, my Lord, I must "saie to your Lordship, as I have said to my Lord of Leicester and Mr. Phillip, the "breaking of from this match, if the default be on your parts, will turn to more "dishonor, than can be repaired with any other marriage in England. And I "protest unto your lordship, I do not think that their is at this day so strong a man in "England of friends, as the litell Earl of Essex, nor any man more lamented than his "father, since the death of king Edward."

Letter of Mr. Waterhouse to Sir Henry Sidney, Nov. 14, 1576, in the Sidney papers.

Digitized by Google

ness of him, who after the evils of the day, enjoyed the tranquillity of domestic life:

"……Whose wife and lovely children run
"To snatch his kiss, and sooth his secret soul
"With bliss unspeakable" (4).

In 1583 he married Frances, the only surviving daughter and heir of Sir Francis Walsingham, a young lady of great beauty and worth. She endeared herself to him by those lovely qualities, which embellish and improve the female character. Walsingham, the principal secretary of state to Elizabeth, and celebrated by Spenser as the great Mecænas of the age, equally the patron of those who cultivated civil arts as of those who were engaged in a military profession, was a disinterested man, influenced by no other principle than that of promoting the welfare of his country: He has been thought worthy in several respects to be compared to that Aristides, whose blameless manners, innocent life, and uncorrupted integrity, secured to him from his fellow citizens the appellation of JUST. When he was employed in foreign embassies, he spared no expenditure out of his

own

(4) —— dulces occurrent oscula nati
Præripere, et tacitâ pectus dulcedine tangent.
Lucret. iii. 910.

Digitized by Google

own purse in ensuring success to those measures, which tended to the public good; and thus, while others amassed princely fortunes, he displayed an uncommon instance of moderation, and a generous contempt of wealth, not only not enriching himself, but suffering a considerable diminution of his own fortune. To the indelible disgrace of Elizabeth and her Lord Treasurer, he died poor (5). The daughter of Walsingham was presented, soon after her marriage, with the following poetical address from the muse of Ben Jonson.

To Mrs. PHILIP SIDNEY.

" I must believe some miracles still bee,
" When SIDNEY'S name I heare or face I see:
" For CUPID, who, at first, took vaine delight,
" In meere out-formes, untill he lost his sight,

——— " Hath

(5) Sir Francis Walsingham had two daughters. 1. Frances, Lady Sidney. 2. Mary, who died unmarried in 1580. " Of him," says Fuller, " it may be said, " abate for the disproportion, as of St Paul, though poor, yet making many rich, " having but one daughter, whose extraordinary handsomeness with a moderate " portion would considerably prefer her in marriage, he neglected wealth in himself, " though I may say he enriched many, not only of his dependants, but even the " English nation by his prudent steering of many affairs."

Fuller's Church History of Britain, B. ix.

See " Birch's Memoirs of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth," Vol. i. p. 7.

Digitized by Google

" Hath chang'd his soule, and made his object you:
" Where finding so much beauty met with vertue,
" He hath not only gain'd himselfe his eyes,
" But, in your love, made all his servants wise.

Ben Jonson's Epigrammes, Ep. cxiv.

In the month of January 1583, the Queen conferred the honour of knighthood on Mr. Sidney, at Windsor Castle: an honour, which, like all others, "she bestowed with frugality "and choice." He had been appointed by John Casimir, Prince Palatine of the Rhine, as his proxy at the next installation of the Knights of the Garter. This Prince, among other marks of royal distinction, which he received, was the only person, whom the Queen with her own hands invested with the garter (6).

We learn from the biographical volume of Izaak Walton, that King James I. gave to the pious Mr. George Herbert a sinecure in Wales of the yearly value of an hundred and twenty pounds, which fell into his Majesty's

disposal

(6) "Donatus est a Reginâ ordine regio quem *quartorii* nominant. Regina suis "manibus cinxit ei sinistrum crus eo cingulo, quod est ordinis insigne, quam bene "volentiæ significationem nunquam antea erga quenquam ediderat."

Epistolarum Hub. Languети. Liber i. Ep. clxii.

See "Ashmole's History of the Order of the Garter," pp. 436, 438.

Digitized by Google

disposal, by the death of Dr. Parry, Bishop of St. Asaph—the very same which Queen Elizabeth had formerly given to Sir Philip Sidney. It is a matter of little moment to determine at what time this act of royal bounty was extended to him.

It is remarked by Mr. Peck in a note on a line in Shakespeare, "*There have been earls, nay, which is more, pensioners here,*" that the pensioners here reckoned as superior to earls, were certain witty, handsome, young gentlemen, much admired by Queen Elizabeth; who had her purse to supply them in all their expenses, and therefore could afford to spend more upon any occasion than earls themselves. "Of this sort of "pensioners," he says, "were Sir Robert Dudley, Sir "Walter Raleigh, Sir Philip Sidney, and many others."

In 1584 the Queen granted to Walter Raleigh, Esquire, his heirs and assigns, letters patent, giving free liberty to discover such remote heathen and barbarous lands, not actually possessed by any Christian Prince, nor inhabited by Christian people, as to him or them shall seem good, to hold the same, with all prerogatives, &c. A bill was brought into Parliament to confirm this patent, and, on being read a second time, was committed to the care of the

Digitized by Google

Vice-chamberlain Hatton, Sir Philip Sidney, Sir Francis Drake, and others. Their patriotism generously exerted itself in encouraging and rewarding that noble ardour, which animated our brave countrymen to prosecute the hazardous discovery of unfrequented coasts. The bill was read a third time without opposition.

In this year Sir Philip was appointed to condole with the French King Henry III. on the demise of his brother the Duke of Anjou, who died at Thierry, one of his own castles in France. The Queen gave instructions for that purpose, but it does not appear that he actually proceeded to the French court, where Sir Edward Stafford then resided, as the English ambassador.

In 1584 Dr. David Powel dedicated his History of Wales to Sir Philip Sidney. "Instead of extolling his "noble birth and virtuous qualities (the ordinary practice "of those that write epistles dedicatory before their books) "'tis to be remarked how this author chose to play the part "of a grave divine, &c. to direct his style; to admonish "him to employ and use his parts and accomplishments "to those ends for which they were bestowed upon him

Digitized by Google

" from above, rather than otherwise vainly with suspicion " of flattery to speak of them after this manner."

" First I would have you to consider with yourself, that " you have received all the good gifts you have, at the " hand of Almighty God, who is the giver of all goodness. " For the which your duty is to render most humble and " hearty thanks unto his divine Majesty. The end also " for which they are given unto you, is at no time to be " forgotten: That is, the setting forth the glory of God, " and for the benefit of your country."—He exhorted him that he should also call to remembrance, that " they " were talents delivered unto him of credit, to use for a " time. For the which he must render an account, when " it should please the owner to call him to it. That the " more he had, the greater his account would be." And then he added; " Use them therefore, and hide them not in " a napkin. For they are the better for the wearing. The " more you use them, the more they will increase. The " more you lay out, the richer you shall be. Have always " before your eyes the glory of God. Never forget the " same in any thing you do, seek the weal-publick of " your country. Labour to do it good in any thing you " may, while you have time so to do. For you have but

Digitized by Google

" a while to remain here. Away you must go after the " common course of Nature. Let the remembrance of " your account, when the stewardship is ended, be never " out of your mind.'

He proceeded, " These be the chief points, leading the " right path to true nobility. These things you shall find " set out at large in that book, wherewithal you" [speaking to Sir Philip] " are most delighted" [meaning surely the holy Scriptures].

Further for the confirming his grave and godly counsel to this young gentleman, he excites him by illustrious patterns, after this manner. " For the putting these " things in practice, I am to lay down two examples to " you to imitate. The which because they are domestic, " ought to move you to be the more willing to follow " them. The one in your own noble Father (Sir Henry " Sidney) who always hath been, and yet is more inclined " and bent to do good to his Country, than to benefit or " enrich himself; as Wales and Ireland, besides his own, can " bear him witness. The other is, your Honorable Father " in Law, Sir Francis Walsingham, her Majesty's chief " Secretary; a Man for his zeal of God's glory and love

Digitized by Google

" towards them that fear God unfainedly, well known " to the world. Follow their steps with the remembrance " of the noble house out of the which you are descended by " your honourable mother (daughter of John, Duke of " Northumberland) and then you cannot do amiss."

" LABOUR, after the example of your father, to discover " and bring to light the actions of the famous men of elder " times: who with conference of the state and govern- " ment of all ages, will bring you to the perfect experience " of the things which you have learned out of Aristotle, " Plato, and Cicero, by your travail in philosophy (7)."

AT this juncture several plots and conspiracies, formed against the Queen's person, both at home and abroad, greatly alarmed her. To remove her fears of danger, the nobility and gentry, and indeed men of all degrees and conditions, instituted an association under the direction of the Earl of Leicester, binding themselves under the most solemn obligations to prosecute even to death those enemies of their country, who should attempt any thing against their sovereign. Of the zeal of Sir Philip Sidney at this momentous

(7) Strype's Annals, Vol. iii. p. 279.

Digitized by Google

momentous crisis no doubt can be entertained. While the efforts of Leicester exposed him to the rude censures and severe aspersions of anonymous writers, his nephew took up the pen to vindicate his fame. With this view he composed an answer to a publication entitled, "Leicester's "Commonwealth (8)," a work which has been considered by

(8) This celebrated tract was first printed abroad in 1584, under the title of "A "Dialogue between a Scholar, a Gentleman, and a Lawyer." From the colour of its "leaves it was called, "Father Parson's green Coat." In 1585 it was translated into French, and also printed abroad with this title, "La vie abominable, ruses, trahisons, "meurtrers, impostures, &c." It was afterward more known by the name of "Leicester's Common Wealth." The reputed author, Robert Parsons, a Jesuit, who is said however to have disowned the book, was of a rough, turbulent, and seditious disposition, whose whole life was spent in various attempts to impede the reformation in England.

In this book is recorded the fact of the murder of Leicester's first wife, who is said to have been thrown from a stair-case by the direction of her husband. The author of "a Yorkshire tragedy" alludes to this fact in the following lines.

Husb. "Are you gossiping, you prating, sturdy quean?
"I'll break your clamour with your neck. Down stairs
"Tumble, tumble headlong. So
[*He throws her down stairs, and stabs her child.*]
"The surest way to charm a woman's tongue
"Is—break her neck—A politician did it."

In consequence of this libel, the Lords and others of the council addressed a letter to Ferdinando Stanley Lord Strange, William Chaderton Lord Bishop of Chester, and others

Digitized by Google

some as the effusion of a mind exasperated by resentment, and surveying every object under the influence of malignity, prejudice, and envy. Others indeed have highly extolled the author as happily illustrating an important

part

others the Justices of Lancashire and Cheshire, requiring them to be more diligent in suppressing libels, and particularly in taking care of "Leicester's Commonwealth," both the Queen and they knowing the Earl of Leicester to be perfectly clear of those aspersions it contains.—*See Peck's "Desiderata curiosa," Vol. i. iv. p.* 45.

A strict adherence to historic truth occasions the insertion of the following passage from a topographical work of great and deserved celebrity.

"Cumner House, in Berkshire, was the Seat of Anthony Foster, Esq. who lies "buried in Cumner church. His epitaph represents him as a very amiable man, very "learned, a great musician, builder, and planter; but his character stands by no "means clear of the imputation of having being accessary to the murder of the "Countess of Leicester, at his own house at Cumner, whither she was sent for that "purpose by her husband: Sir Richard Verney, one of the Earl's retainers, was the "chief agent in this horrid business*. A chamber is shown in the ruined mansion, "which adjoins the churchyard at Cumner, called the Dudley chamber, where the "Countess is said to have been murdered, and afterwards thrown down stairs, to make "it appear that her death was accidental†. She was buried at Cumner, but her body "was afterwards removed to St. Mary's church, in Oxford."

Lysons's "Magna Britannia," Vol. i. p. 270.

* See "Ashmole's Berkshire."

† Dugdale mentions the Countess of Leicester's death, as happening at Mr. Forster's house at Cumner, by a fall down stairs "*as 'twas said.*" *Baronage, Vol. ii.*

Digitized by Google

part of the English history. They have equalled him to Tacitus himself, and have discovered in him the wisdom of the Roman historian. In this tract the Earl of Leicester is represented as a man of extreme ambition and pride, of notorious falsehood and consummate treachery; entertaining secret malice against the Queen, and a deadly rancour against her best and wisest counsellors, while the most enormous and dreadful crimes are imputed to him. Sir Philip Sidney's answer is certainly imperfect, by no means containing a complete defence of his noble relation from the very heinous charges brought against him. It is principally confined to two points—a vindication of the high descent of the family of the Dudleys, from a long train of illustrious ancestors, against the insinuations of the writer of the libel, who depreciated the parentage of Leicester as mean and obscure—and an attempt to show the inconsistency of his antagonist, as giving opposite and contradictory descriptions of the same person, who in the beginning of the book is said to be so powerful, that the Queen had cause to fear him, and, at the end of it, so abject, that any might tread on him—the same man so unfriendly as no man could love him—so supported by friends that the court and the country were full of them; the same man, a dastard to fear any thing, but so ventrous

Digitized by Google

as to undertake such a matter, that Hercules himself would be afraid to do, if he were among us (9).

EVERY indulgence is allowableto the feelings of a young writer, anxious to rescue from reproach the reputation of his relation, his patron, and his friend. But surely it would have been much more praise-worthy to have abstained from all asperity of speech. It is impossible not to censure the following address to his nameless antagonist, particularly when it is remembered that the heavy accusations brought againt Lord Leicester are passed over in profound silence. "But to thee, I saie, Thou therein liest in thy throte (1);

——— "which

(9) It was said of the Earl of Leicester, that he seemed wiser than he was; of Sir Nicholas Bacon, that he was wiser than he seemed to be; and of Lord Hunsdon, that he neither was nor seemed wise.

(1) Sir John Holles, the first Earl of Clare, in answer to a charge brought against him in 1592, says, "I committed no injustice, no partiality, and therefore *you ly most falsely.*"

"Thou, Bolingbroke, as low as to thy heart
"Through the false passage of thy throat thou lyest."
Shakespeare.

"Give me leave to tell you, you lie in your throat."
Ibid.

"—— gives me the lie i' the throat
"As deep as to the lungs." *Ibid.*

Digitized by Google

" which I will be reddy to justify upon thee in any place " of Europe, where thou wilt assign me a free place of " comming, as within three months after the publishing " hereof I may understand thy mind." Is this the language of a just and candid advocate of injured innocence? Indeed the use of such language may be deemed less inexcusable, when it is remarked, that in the reign of Elizabeth the manners of the English gentry were far removed from that urbanity and refinement, which adorned them in later times. As the answer to this libel remained in manuscript for many years, we may venture to conclude that it was not thought to be a sufficiently strong vindication of the character which was so severely assailed. It first appeared in the Sidney papers edited in 1746, from a copy in the hand-writing of Robert the second Earl of Leicester of the name of Sidney, and nephew to Sir Philip.—A full and more circumstantial defence was published in a tract entitled " Father Parsons's green Coat well dusted, or short " and pithy animadversions on that infamous fardle of abuse " and falsities, entitled 'Leicester's Commonwealth.'" It must not be denied that Leicester was, " in his private " character, the most obnoxious of all who were employed " by Queen Elizabeth, and that he was suspected on

Digitized by Google

" good grounds of the most shocking crimes, which he " affected to conceal under high pretensions to piety (2)."

MARTIN FORBISHER, born of an obscure family near Doncaster in Yorkshire, arrived at distinguished pre-eminence in his nautical profession. In 1576 he made a voyage, with a view to discover the North-west passage; and though his expedition failed of complete success, it excited the attention and admiration of his countrymen. Mr. Philip Sidney, struck with the genius and courage of this enterprising man, had formerly given so flattering an account of his extraordinary abilities, that Languet without hesitation announced him to be capable of eclipsing the fame of Magellan, and even of Christopher Columbus, while he expatiated on the avidity with which the English nation would seize on the islands discovered by Forbisher, and, as it were, predicted that dreadful effusion of blood, which would take place in the new world. It was probably at this time that Sidney first experienced the impulse of ambition inciting him to form along with Sir Fulke Greville, a design of accompanying Sir Francis Drake in a voyage of discovery to America. That bold and experi-

enced

(2) Birch's " Memoirs of Queen Elizabeth," Vol. i. p. 6.

Digitized by Google

enced navigator had already traversed the terrestrial globe, having entered the Pacific Ocean through the Straits of Magellan, and returned by the Cape of Good Hope. He is emphatically described as " the first of Britons that " adventured to sail round the globe, and carried into " unknown seas and nations the knowledge and glory of " the English name." So great was his success in his first circumnavigation, that he is supposed to have filled the Queen's coffers as well as his own, by the vast treasures which he had brought from the Spanish West Indies.

SIR PHILIP'S plan for associating himself with Sir Francis Drake (3) in his second expedition, was conducted with the utmost secrecy. He was to have been the principal director of it, having engaged himself to equip both a naval and a land armament, and to make a powerful attack upon the Spanish settlements in America. If it had been carried into execution, it would probably have involved him in

—— disappoint-

(3) Foreigners, and even Hubert Languet himself, considered Drake as no better than a pirate.

" Nothing is happened notable at home, save only Drake's return, of which I " know not the secret points, but about the world he hath been and rich he is " returned." *Mr. Philip Sidney's letter to his brother, Oct.* 18, 1580.

Digitized by Google

disappointment and disgrace, and overwhelmed all his real friends with astonishment and sorrow. Little can be urged in its defence. Yet it should not be forgotten that a spirit of speculation, of mighty enterprize, and arduous adventure had seized many of his contemporaries—that every attempt which tended to augment the naval and commercial strength of the nation was entitled to rewards and honours—that all Europe resounded with the fame of men, who most cheerfully encountered difficulty and danger to explore distant and unknown lands. In the annals of our country are eternized the names of great naval heroes, of Drake, Raleigh, Frobisher, Cavendish, Davis, and Hawkins. May we not therefore be inclined to excuse, at least not to blame with rigid severity, that ardour with which Sir Philip Sidney was inflamed to seek renown? He was not yet ennobled by any singular mark of royal favour: the Queen had delayed to promote him to any place of honour or trust in the state. High in rank, in the midst of prosperity and ease, he listened to the calls of Ambition. However he might relish the leisure and tranquillity of domestic life, he disdained to repose in it. The splendid virtue, the wonderful talents of Drake, were incentives too powerful to be resisted by a mind aspiring to celebrity, and in the full enjoyment of

Digitized by Google

activity and vigour. The Queen was no sooner apprized of the preparations made for this expedition, than she issued peremptory orders to restrain him from his purpose. It has been suggested that the object of his ambition was to accomplish the conquest of America; that it was the result of serious reflexion and consummate wisdom:—"the "exactest model Europe ever saw, a conquest not to be "enterprised, but by Sir Philip's reaching spirit, that "grasped all circumstances, and commanded all interest on "this side the line." We may however reasonably presume that this representation was dictated by the indulgent partiality of friendship. The preparations made on this occasion were by no means adequate to so difficult an undertaking; and it is to be lamented that this second voyage of Drake was unfortunate. He sailed from Plymouth on the twelfth day of September 1585, with a fleet of five and twenty ships and pinnaces, and after various attacks on the Spanish settlements in the West-Indies, he arrived in England on the twenty-eighth day of July 1586, having lost seven hundred and fifty men. The gain of this expedition amounted to sixty thousand pounds, of which forty thousand were the share of the adventurers who fitted out the ships, and the remainder distributed among the several crews, amounted to six pounds each

Digitized by Google

man. "So cheap," says one of Drake's biographers, "is "life sometimes hazarded."

SHAKESPEARE not unfrequently alludes to that ardency of enterprise, which impelled the sons of noblemen, and others of the best families in England, to undertake voyages for the discovery of unexplored regions:

"Some to the wars, to try their fortunes there,
"Some to discover islands far away."

The two Gentlemen of Verona.

THE penetration of his venerable friend and preceptor seems to have foreseen the eagerness of Sir Philip Sidney to engage himself in an attempt of this kind. He endeavoured to check the impulse of this inclination by observing, that the thirst for gain was the principal motive on these occasions. "Guard yourself," says he, "against this "ignoble passion. Let not the love of gold enter into "that breast, which hath hitherto admitted only the love "of truth, and the desire of deserving well of all man-"kind (4)."

WHEN

(4) "Ego vero ad te respicio, qui hanc ob rem exultas, perinde ac si patriæ esset "optimè consultum, cum præsertim superiori vere in te animadverterem cupiditatem "aliquam

Digitized by Google

WHEN the wreath of honour is publicly held forth, it is glorious even to enter the lists of fame. An unsuccessful candidate obtains renown, if he contends for the palm of victory with men of high descent and exalted worth. Sir Philip Sidney is named among the competitors for the elective kingdom of Poland, which was vacated in 1585 by the death of Stephen Bathori (5) Prince of Transylvania,

who

" aliquam suscipiendæ ejusmodi navigationis. Cave, obsecro, ne illa, ut ait poeta, " auri sacra fames irrepat in animum tuum, in quem nihil hactenus admisisti, præter " amorem veritatis, et studium bene merendi de omnibus."..... *Epist. lxi.*

(5) One of the best and wisest kings of Poland. Languet thus speaks of him. " Bathori regis Poloniæ prudentiam, et animi moderationem omnes laudant. " Gaudeo nos habere in orbe Christiano saltem unum regem in quo sit aliquid vir- " tutis."..... *Epist. lxv.*

To this day the Poles revere the memory of Bathori, and ascribe to him literally all the virtues enumerated in the following epitaph, which was composed with an intention that it should be inscribed upon his tomb.

In templo plus quam sacerdos,
In republicâ plus quam rex,
In sententiâ dicendâ plus quam juris-consultus,
In exercitu plus quam imperator,
In acie plus quam miles,
In adversis perferendis injuriisque condonandis plus quam vir,
In publicâ libertate tuendâ plus quam civis,
In amicitiâ colendâ plus quam amicus,
In convictu plus quam familiaris,
In venatione ferisque domandis plus quam leo,
In totâ reliquâ vitâ plus quam philosophus.

See " Modern Univ. Hist," Fol. Vol. xii. p. 490.

Digitized by Google

who by marrying Anne the younger sister of Sigismund Augustus II. King of the Poles, by whom she had been elected their Queen, on the abdication of Henry de Valois, secured to himself the crown; and of whom Languet writes, "I am glad that there is at least one king in "Christendom, who has some portion of goodness." Does not this contest for dignity and power, confirm to our countryman his claim to pre-eminence? The Queen was averse from the measure; "refusing," saith Sir Robert Naunton, "to further his advancement, not only out of "emulation, but out of fear to lose the jewel of her "times (6)." According to Fuller, he declined the dignity, preferring rather to be "a subject to Queen Elizabeth, than "a sovereign beyond the seas."

In

(6) She was wont to call Walter Devereux, Earl of Essex, "the jewel of her realm, "and the ornament of her nobility." *Hollingshed.*

"Nor could she endure to see her subjects wear the titles of a foreign Prince: the "cause she committed Sir Matthew Arundel, of Warder Castle, in the west, for "accepting from the German Cæsar the dignity of a Count, and denied Sir Philip "Sidney the crown of Poland." *Osborne's Miscellaneous Works, Vol. i. p. 44.*

She used to say, "that as a chaste spouse should look only on her husband, so "ought a subject to look up to that Sovereign whom God has established to reign "over him. I will not allow," said the Queen, "that my sheep shall be marked with a "stranger's mark, nor that they follow the whistle of a foreign shepherd."

See "L'Ambassadeur & ses Fonctions," par M. de Wicquefort.

Digitized by Google

In Languet's letters we find a regular account of the proceedings relative to the election of a King in Poland, previously to the present period. The names, the characters, the connexions of the several competitors for the regal authority are sedulously pointed out. It is more than probable that very strong impressions might thus be made on the mind of a young man not void of ambition. From two letters dated at Frankfort, in 1577, it appears that a secret proposal had been made to him—that this proposal required encouragement from the Queen, and that it had been communicated to many of his friends upon the continent, who approved it, and engaged themselves to promote it. If a conjecture might be allowed, I should be inclined to think the purport of this proposal to have been, that on some future vacancy the noble youth should solicit the suffrages of the Polish electors, who were no strangers to his merit. Indeed the reputation of his virtues was blazoned far and wide in all the nations of Europe, while his faithful friend and correspondent omitted no opportunity of stimulating his ambition in the pursuit of glory. But he could scarcely have flattered himself with any certainty of succeeding to the crown, which at this time was not bestowed as a reward to superior merit, but rather purchased by a public largess, and by private corruption.

Digitized by Google

The Holy League, as it has been called, was first instituted in 1576, for the protection of the Catholic Religion against the Hugonots. At the head of this league was the Duke of Guise. It was supported by the strength and influence of Spain, and under the specious pretext of maintaining the authority of the French King, absolutely annihilated it. This Prince, being too weak to resist the designs of those who formed the league, was at length compelled to join them, to publish an edict against the Protestants, and even to give the command of his army to the Duke of Guise. To oppose this powerful combination, the King of Navarre was declared the Protector and General of the Protestants, and his brother the Prince of Conde was appointed his Lieutenant-General. The assistance of Queen Elizabeth was deemed essentially necessary to promote their interests; and no exertion was omitted to unite the Protestant powers. To accomplish this, the Sieur de Segar(7), the confidental friend of the King of Navarre, was

(7) James de Segar, Baron of Parduillan, a Gascon, who had providentially escaped from the Parisian massacre, was a most zealous advocate for the reformed religion. It must be acknowledged, that he placed too much confidence in the predictions of James Brocard, a celebrated visionary, who applied the oracles of the Scriptures to the particular events of the sixteenth century, declaring that a Protestant would

Digitized by Google

was sent into England. Mornay du Plessis recommended him to Sir Philip Sidney, in the following letter:

" SIR,

" The King of Navarre is about to despatch Mr. de " Segar, the superintendant of his affairs, to the Queen " your sovereign.

" It will occur to you that during the last year his " Majesty proposed to visit the Queen, and those Princes " who are of the same religious profession with ourselves. " The perpetual agitation of our state has compelled him " to defer his journey, and still renders it impracticable. " But, that the church may not suffer from the delay, his " Majesty is desirous of effecting the purpose of his own " journey by means of the present embassy. Mr. de Segar " is a gentleman, as you will perceive, replete with zeal

" and

would subvert the Papal power, and make himself the head of the united Christians. Mr. le Segar, a faithful servant of the King of Navarre, interpreted these predictions in favour of that monarch, to whom he offered himself as a proper person to undertake an embassy to the Protestant princes. His offer was accepted, and the King sent him into Germany, Sweden, Denmark, and England, to renew the confederacies which his royal master had contracted with those who were of the reformed religion.

See Bayle under the article Brocardus.

Digitized by Google

" and piety, and of great public and private merit; and,
" what is of greater moment, the object of his mission
" involves the general welfare of the Christian world. The
" business is deserving of your exertions in its behalf;
" and, whilst I heartily recommend it to your attention,
" I must at the same time add, that it peculiarly behoves
" the Queen, considering the rank she holds and the
" tranquillity which God has given her, to interfere in it
" personally.

" But it generally happens that those who have felt an
" evil most deeply, are the first to foresee and provide
" against it. You know that the deliverance of Switzerland
" originated with the cantons of Switz, Uri, and Under-
" would; not that they were the most powerful or most
" warranted by their resources to resist, but that having
" been the greatest sufferers, they were consequently more
" earnest in the application of a remedy.

" This, though immediately respecting the Church, has
" yet a more general object. There are some other topics,
" which, as they more properly relate to yourself, we will
" discuss at some future opportunity. I would rather that

Digitized by Google

"M. de Segar should make you acquainted with them, "than myself commit them to you in paper. As to the "rest, I have been anxiously expecting the arrival of "your relation, who was reported to be on his journey to "us. Whenever he comes, he shall be welcome. But "why promise and never gratify us? I am aware indeed, "that in courts, how indulgent soever they may be, a "man cannot act as he pleases. Take it however in good "part that we call upon you, although the first invitation "ought to come from yourself.

"FINALLY, do me the honour to believe that my services "are and always shall be at your disposal. I am desirous "of knowing whether you be married or not. I cannot "help supposing you are, on account of the long chasm of "three months in your correspondence, which could not "methinks have happened unless your engagements had "been very important.

"I humbly kiss your hands, and pray God to have you "in his holy keeping. July, 1583."

AND in 1585, when those who had entered into the league, openly avowed their intention of excluding Henry

Digitized by Google

of Bourbon, as being a heretic, from the succession to the crown of France, and soothed his uncle, the Cardinal of Bourbon, with the hopes of their support, affairs were brought to a crisis, and the intercession of the Queen of England was again most earnestly solicited.

DU PLESSIS to Sir PHILIP SIDNEY.

" Sir,

" Our predictions are at length verified. The storm has " burst upon us. Owing to our want of exertion, shall I " say, or to treachery, or to both? but, in short, upon " us it is fallen. The Prince has taken his resolution, and " God grant him firmness in proportion to his trials. " Impart to him also the benefit of your assistance, as he " may require it; and, above all, increase your diligence, " as his necessities press upon him. To you this will be " sufficient. The gentleman, who is the bearer of this, will " say a word or two on my behalf. *Utinam, et rursum* " *utinam*. Believe me at all times your servant, an ad- " mirer of your virtue, and anxious for the increase of your " reputation.

Digitized by Google

" I humbly salute you, and pray the Almighty to have " you in his holy keeping (8). July 8, 1585."

THE policy of Elizabeth did not allow her to view with indifference the civil commotions of France. She employed her good offices in favour of the Hugonots, and expended no inconsiderable sums of money in levying that army of Germans which the Prince of Conde and Prince Casimir conducted into France. She also extended her protection of the reformed religion to the Netherlands.

---

(8) It appears from these two letters, the originals of which in the French language are in the " Memoires de Messire Philippes de Mornay," &c. p. 232, 536, how highly the character of Mr. Philip Sidney was estimated, as being one who was both willing and able to expedite the important negotiation which was intrusted to the King of Navarre's ambassador in England.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

FROM THE ARRIVAL OF SIR PHILIP SIDNEY, AT FLUSHING, IN 1585, TO HIS DEATH IN 1586.

THE Protestant inhabitants of the Netherlands most grievously oppressed by the unprecedented cruelties of the Duke of Alva, at length implored the assistance of Queen Elizabeth. On the 29th of June, 1585, she received at her palace, at Greenwich, the Deputies of the United Provinces, who then offered to her Majesty the sovereignty of the Low Countries. Though she declined to accept the honour, she promised to send a military force to their relief; for the payment and support of which several towns in Holland were delivered to her Majesty as pledges. On this occasion she indulged the martial disposition of Sir Philip Sidney, who was now a privy counsellor. By a patent subscribed at Westminster, on the seventh day of November, 1585, he was constituted Governor of Flushing,

Digitized by Google

and at the same time Sir Thomas Cecil was declared Governor of Brille. The former, a town in Zealand, was considered from its situation near the mouth of the Scheld, as one of the most important places in the Netherlands (9). This cautionary town, through the patronage of the Queen of England, the protection of an English garrison, and the influx of English commerce, soon became the seat of prosperity and opulence. Brille, strongly fortified, and furnished with a convenient harbour, is situated in Voorn, one of the islands of Holland. It was another of the cautionary towns granted to Elizabeth, as a compensation for the aid which she gave to the Dutch, and was restored to them thirty years afterward by King James I.

Sir Philip was prepared to sacrifice his fortune and his life for his religion and country: and in one of his letters there is so strong a proof that he considered the cause of the persecuted inhabitants of the Netherlands as the cause of God, that it would be improper to deny the Protestant reader the pleasure of perusing it. "If her Majesty," says

——— he,

(9) "When noble Lisle doth keep with English bands
"Flushing, the key of all the Netherlands."

The Dove, a Poem by Dr. Richard Zouch.

Digitized by Google

he, "wear the fountain, I wold fear, considering what I "daily find; that we shold wax dry. But she is but a "means whom God useth. And I know not whether I am "deceaved; but I am faithfully persuaded, that, if she "shold withdraw herself, other springes wold rise to help "this action. For, methinkes, I see the great work indeed "in hand against the abusers of the world, wherein it is no "greater fault to have confidence in man's power, than it "is too hastily to despair of God's work (1)."

SIR PHILIP had no sooner accepted this employment, than he appointed Mr. William Temple to be his private secretary. This gentleman, descended from the ancient family of Temple in the county of Leicester, was educated at King's College, in Cambridge. Though originally designed for the practice of the law, he was induced to apply himself to the more refined and philosophical studies, which were recently introduced into the learned world. Hence he interested himself with much zeal in the controversy on the writings of the celebrated Peter Ramus, of whose uncommon erudition he was a profound admirer, and in defence of whom he took up his pen, under the assumed

(1) From a short Life of Sir Philip Sidney, in manuscript, by Thomas Comber, LL. D.

Digitized by Google

assumed name of Mildapettus (2). Sir Philip Sidney charmed with his character, persuaded him to relinquish his academical life, and to accompany him abroad.

THE new Governor arrived at Flushing on the eighteenth day of November, and was conducted into the town with every mark of distinction. He was immediately appointed colonel of all the Dutch regiments, and captain of a band of English soldiers consisting of two hundred foot and one hundred horse. Not long after, the Earl of Leicester, having under his command an army of five thousand foot, and

(2) The two following tracts were inscribed to Philip, Earl of Arundel.

1. "Francisci Mildapetti Navareni ad Ev. Digbeium Anglum admonitio de unicâ "P. Rami methodo, rejectis cæteris, retinendâ, Londini 1580."

Everard Digby, the father of Sir Everard Digby, who suffered death for his guilt in the gun-powder plot, was the author of a tract—"De duplici methodo libri duo Rami "methodum refutantes, Lond. 1580."

2. "Pro Mildapetti de unicâ methodo defensione contra diplodophilum commentatio "Gul. Tempelli e regio collegio Cantabrigiensi, Lond. 1581."

By the unica *methodus* is to be understood the analytic, as the only legitimate method to be used in reasoning; while others maintained also the necessity of the synthetic method, and thus might be properly called diplophili.

Mr. Temple dedicated to Sir Philip Sidney, his edition of "P. Rami Dialecticæ libri "duo, scholiis G. Tempelli Cantabrigiensis, Lond. 1584."

Digitized by Google

and a thousand horse, was sent to the United Provinces, as General of the English auxiliary forces, with a strict injunction to undertake nothing unworthy of his Sovereign, or inconsistent with the dignity of his high office. The instructions given to him were somewhat different from those which are in use in modern times. He was particularly directed to have a regard to his soldiers "that they served "God and demeaned themselves religiously." Sir Philip Sidney, promoted to the office of General of the horse under his uncle, joined himself to this army with that gallantry and spirit, which then animated our young nobility and gentry. The inhabitants of the Netherlands, though they received the English commander in chief with every demonstration of joy, as their guardian and protector, were too soon convinced that he was not possessed of that wisdom and military skill which they had reason to expect, and without which they could entertain no prospect of success in opposing the designs of their inveterate enemies (3).

However commendable the zeal of Elizabeth might be in liberally affording aid to the oppressed Protestants, who,

to

(3) Sir Robert Naunton has observed concerning Leicester's exploits in Holland, that his device might have been without prejudice to the great Cæsar,—*Veni, vidi, redii.*

Digitized by Google

to use the metaphorical language of the Prince of Orange, were "protected under the shadow of her wings," that fatal change, which the moral character of the English sustained by this their intercourse with foreign countries, cannot be sufficiently lamented. Alas! their habits of sobriety and temperance no longer existed. "Yet this is not to be "omitted," saith Mr. Camden, "that the English, which of "all the northern nations had been least drinkers, and "most commended for their sobriety, learned by these "Netherland wars to drown themselves with immoderate "drinking, and by drinking to others' healths, to impair "their own. And, ever since, the vice of drunkenness hath "so spread itself over the whole nation, that in our days "came forth the first restraint thereof by severity of laws."

But this eventful period is distinguished by nothing more than the vastly great advantages which were derived to the commerce of England, by the influx of exiled strangers into the kingdom. It is well known that industry and commerce had for a series of years fixed their residence in the Netherlands. All the cities and towns of the Belgic provinces were inhabited by ingenious and industrious artisans and manufacturers; and particularly Brussels, Ghent, Bruges, and above them all, Antwerp, the great emporium of merchandise. The unceasing and

Digitized by Google

merciless cruelties of popish persecution drove these valuable members of society from their peaceful abodes. Seized with trepidation and horror at the dire oppression, the exquisite tortures, the slow lingering deaths with which they were menaced, they fled with inconceivable speed from danger and destruction. England afforded to them a safe and happy asylum. In this land of civil and religious liberty, they were treated with singular humanity and kindness. The decayed streets of Canterbury, Norwich, and many other towns, were peopled with men, who were possessed of superior skill and knowledge in all kinds of manufactures. A new system of things took place in the English nation, the wealth and strength of which was thus considerably augmented by the arbitrary and oppressive conduct of Philip the second of Spain, its most bitter and implacable enemy. But to return from this digression (4).

It would be foreign to the purpose of this work to recount the different events, which followed the appointment of

Leicester

(4) A similar event contributed to the advancement of British industry and commerce in the seventeenth century, by that cruel and unjust measure, the revocation of the edict of Nantz, when many thousands of the best manufacturers of France fled into England, where they established their manufactures with uncommon success, and met with the most liberal encouragement.

Digitized by Google

Leicester to the supreme command, " as Governor and " Captain General of Holland and Zealand, the united and " confederated provinces." Nor would it be necessary to mention the resentment of the Queen on the behaviour of the Earl, whom, as she boasted, " she had raised out " of the dust," and whom she afterwards suspected of aspiring to the sovereignty or perpetual dictatorship of these provinces, by accepting those exorbitant powers which the states offered to him. It is painful to dwell on the causes of jealousy and discontent that subsisted between the different commanders. These causes were in some measure removed by the intervention of the wise counsels of Sir Philip Sidney, who was extremely dissatisfied with the military administration of his uncle. In a letter to him, dated on the second day of February 1586, he requests that forces may be sent to the besieging of Steenberg. " I " will undertake," he writes, " upon my life either to ruin " it, or to make the enemy raise his siege from Grave, or, " which I most hope, both." Sympathizing with their distresses, and resenting the ill usage of the common soldiers, his brave countrymen, he adds; " It grieves me very much " the soldiers are so hardly dealt with in your first begin- " ning of government, not only in their pay, but in taking " booties from them, as by your excellency's letters I find."

Digitized by Google

In another letter of the same date, he intimates that "his "charges divers ways, and particularly his horsemen, grow "greater than he is able to go through withal." He complains, that "having obtained from Count Hollock a patent "for the people of Somerdyke to lodge him a number of "horse, till his company were sufficient to be numbered, "these people had gotten from Leicester an act to be free "from this service." It appears from the subsequent part of this letter, that he was not to demand pay, until his men were mustered, nor to muster them until their number was complete. He therefore desires that he may either have a quarter assigned him, or have men sent him sufficient to make up the number. He protests that, "so far from de-"siring gain, he is willing to spend all he can make, and "that his only care is to be able to go through with it" (5). It is too obvious from these letters, that the commander did not conduct himself with a sufficient degree of prudence and discretion.

THE provinces of Zealand and Holland endeavoured to repair the loss which they had sustained from the death of

William

(5) From the Collection of the Hardwick papers.

Digitized by Google

William Prince of Orange, by electing his son Maurice (6) their Stadtholder and Captain General by sea and land. Maurice was at that time eighteen years of age, but such rays of genius shone forth in his character, as approved him worthy of the honours conferred upon him (7). Sir Philip Sidney, accompanied by this young prince, took Axell, a town in Flanders, without the loss of a single man, in July 1586. Previously to the attack, within an English mile of the town, he called so many of his soldiers as could hear him, and addressed them in a long oration. He explained to them the cause in which they were engaged, representing it as the cause of God, and assuring them that they were fighting for her Majesty, of whose goodness to them they had full experience. "It was," he said, "unnecessary to "inform them, that they contended against enemies, who "were men of a false religion, equally hostile to God and

"to

(6) Philip William, his eldest brother, had been seized by the Duke of Alva, forced away at the age of thirteen years from the university of Louvain, in direct violation of the privileges of that place, and sent prisoner to Spain, where he was educated in Popery and detained for almost thirty years. He returned to his native country in 1596, and died at Brussels in 1618.

(7) Mod. Univ. Hist. Vol. xi. p. 429.

Digitized by Google

" to his church. They opposed the power of Antichrist (8), " the tyranny of a people whose unkindness in nature and " life were such, that the vengeance of Heaven would not " leave them unpunished. He reminded them of their be- " loved country: that they were Englishmen, whose bravery " excited the terrour and commanded the praise of the whole " world: that they should fear neither death nor danger, in " fulfilling the promise which was due to their prince, in " promoting the honour of England and their own credit: " that those for whom they fought were their neighbours, " always friendly, always well-wishers to Englishmen." As a further incentive to confirm their courage, he expressed his decided resolution to reward their merits by his favour and patronage. This harangue, delivered with artless eloquence and with all the energy of genuine loyalty and patriotism, could not fail of producing its pro-

per

(8) The proposition, that " the Pope was Antichrist," was the great support of the reformation. Wickliff, Jewel, Grosted, Whitaker, Hooker, Dr. Henry More, Mede, and others the best and ablest divines of our church, adhered to this principle. Nor were the laity less firmly convinced of this important truth, so clearly predicted in the prophetic scriptures. Lambertus Danæus, the friend of Sir Philip Sidney, had written a treatise on this subject, which is thus characterized: " Libellus tuus de " Antichristo accuratissimè scriptus. Nihil adhuc legi in hoc genere brevius simul " et luculentius."..... *Zanchius.*

Digitized by Google

per effect. "It did so link the minds of the people, that "they did desire rather to die in that service, than live in "the contrary" (9).

THE efforts of these brave men were crowned with victory. "The honour of the attempt to seize Axell, and the execu- "tion of that considerable action, are given to Sir Philip "Sidney, who is here said to have revived the ancient dis- "cipline of order and silence in the march of his soldiers. "They scaled the walls of the town by ladders in the night, "and forcing their way directly into the market-place, a "chosen company was ordered to make a stand there for "security to the rest, who were sent up and down the town "by the direction of their commanding officers. And when "their service was done, Sir Philip liberally rewarded every "one of them according to his merit, out of his own private "fortune" (1).

NOTHING

(9) Stowe's Chronicle, p. 733.

(1) Grotius ascribes the honour of this achievement to Prince Maurice: "Posuit "Mauritius rudimenta Axelae expugnator quam Ternusio egressus nocturno scalarum "ascensu invasit."..... *Annal. l. v.*

But it is not unusal for an historian to assign the honour to the commander in chief, especially if he be a young prince; and Grotius is only giving a very concise account of the matter.

Digitized by Google

NOTHING but inevitable necessity compelled him to lay waste a rich and fertile country, by breaking a sluice and cutting out a bank to give a free passage to the sea, and thus to overspread with water a very large extent of the enemy's territory. Such is the cruel operation of war, delighting itself in scenes of disaster and havoc, and extinguishing for a time all the feelings of humanity!

IN the month of February this year, Sir Philip attempted to take Stenburg. His failure in this attempt was occasioned by a sudden thaw. The unfortunate attack upon Graveling cannot be more accurately related than in the words of the historian of the reign of Philip the second. "Sir Philip Sidney had private notice given him by *La* "*Motte*, the governor of the town, that upon his approach "the town should be yielded up into his hands. But fear- "ing to rely upon the promise of an enemy, he judged it "his duty to proceed in the affair with great wariness and "circumspection. He therefore called together his officers, "and laying before them his suspicions, caused the inferior "sort of them to cast dice upon a drum-head, who should "be sent on this dangerous expedition; and the lot falling "upon Sir William Brown, his own lieutenant, Sir Philip "ordered him, in case of any fraudulent dealing, to throw

Digitized by Google

"down his arms, and yield himself prisoner. When the "company had set forward on their march, they found all "the outward signals exactly performed. But no sooner "were they entered the town, and arrived at a sufficient "distance beyond the gate, than they were all attacked on "every side by a discharge of shot from windows and "cellars. Upon discovery of the treachery, the com- "manding officer threw down his arms, as he was directed, "and was taken prisoner: the rest attempted a retreat, "but were so closely pursued, that only eight of them "escaped alive."

In this same year Sir Philip experienced a severe domestic calamity by the demise of both his parents. Sir Henry Sidney died at the Bishop's palace at Worcester on the fifth day of May, having been for twenty-six years Lord President of his Majesty's council established in the principality of Wales. He was buried with great funeral pomp at Penshurst on the twenty-fifth day of June following (2).

"For

(2) His bowels were deposited in the Dean's chapel in the cathedral church at Worcester, and his heart on the north side of the chancel of the church at Ludlow, in the tomb of his daughter Ambrosia, who died in 1574. See in Gough's most splendid work, "Sepulchral Monuments," &c. numerous instances of the usages which prevailed in the sixteenth century of burying the heart, the bowels, and other remains of the same body in different places.

Digitized by Google

"For whose death," says Mr. Mollineux, the continuator of Hollinshed's Chronicle, "there was great mone and lamenta-
"tion, especially by those under his government, as having
"lost that special nobleman, whom for courtesie they loved,
"for justice among them they highly honored, and for
"many other rare gifts and singular virtues they, in his
"life-time, greatly esteemed, and at his death marvellously
"bemoned, lifting up both hands and hearts to Almighty
"God, and heartily wishing and humbly praying a like
"might succeed in the place as he had been" (3).

In the year preceding his death he erected a tower at Penshurst to the memory of Edward VI., with an inscription, designed to perpetuate his grateful sense of the beneficence, which was graciously extended by that excellent prince to his father Sir William Sidney.

The Lady Mary Sidney survived her husband about three months. Her exemplary behaviour in her last moments is aptly described by Mr. Mollineux. At the close of life,

when

(3) On this occasion was published, "A godlie sermon, preached the xxi day of "June, 1586, at Pensehurst, in Kent, at the burial of the late right honourable Sir "Henrie Sidney, Knight of the Garter, &c. by Tho. White."

Digitized by Google

when every worldly connexion is ready to be dissolved, female excellency will shine with a lustre far superior to the brilliancy of festive gaiety and idle merriment, when it can appear in that dignified form, which was assumed by this accomplished woman on her death-bed. "The ninth "day of August next following the decease of Sir Henry "Sidney, died the most noble, worthy, beneficent, and "bountious Lady, the Lady Mary Sidney, his only spouse "and most dear wife, most zealously, godly, and penitently, "as by the testimony of some honorable and other grave "personages is well avouched. During the whole course "of her sickness, and especially a little before it pleased "Almighty God to call her to his mercy, she used such "godly speeches, earnest and effectual persuasions to all "those about her, to exhort them to repentance, and "amendment of life, and to dehort them from all sin and "lewdness, as wounded the consciences and inwardly "pierced the hearts of many that heard her. And though "they before knew her to exceed most of her sex in sin-"gular virtue and quality, as good speech, apt and ready "conception, excellency of wit and notable delivery; yet "her discourse then amazed and astonished the hearers, "and she left the world loved and honored by all who

Digitized by Google

"knew her, and the renowned house whereof she de-
"scended" (4).

A detachment from the English army accidentally met with a convoy sent by the enemy to Zutphen, a strong town in Guelderland, then besieged by the Spaniards. The battle which immediately ensued, was fought on the twenty-second day of September 1586, with such impetuosity, that it became a proverbial expression among the Belgian soldiers to denote a most severe and ardent conflict (5). The English troops, far inferior in number to

those

(4) Mr. Mollineux's Continuation of Hollingshed's Chronicle.

(5) "Atrox illa atque perquam vehemens pugna, adeo ut, si quod ardens prælium "jactantius efferrent, cum Zutphaniensi occursu comparare consuessent."

Strada de Bello Belgico. Dec. ii. l. viii.

The death of Sir Philip is thus recorded by Thuanus;

"Ea victoria unius Philippi Sidneii virtute, ingenii solertiâ ac eruditione præstantis "adolescentis clade obscurata est." *Thuani Hist. Lib. 85. s. 5.*

Zutphen, situated on the banks of the river Issel, is a town noted for the acts of oppression and inhumanity exercised there by the Duke of Alva. Above five hundred of the citizens who had surrendered themselves to him, were at one time put to the sword, without distinction of age or sex; and when his soldiers were tired with slaughtering, they cast numbers into the Issel, and indulged themselves in the horrid joy of beholding the unhappy sufferers perishing in the stream!

Watson's History of Philip II. B. x.

Digitized by Google

those of the enemy, though they gained a decisive victory, sustained an irreparable loss by the death of Sir Philip Sidney. Having one horse shot under him, he mounted a second. Seeing Lord Willoughby surrounded by the enemy, and in imminent danger, he rushed forward to rescue him. Having accomplished his purpose, he continued the fight with great spirit, until he was himself wounded by a bullet on the left knee. "Among the rest," saith Stow, "Sir Philip Sidney so behaved himself, that "it was wonder to see; for hee charged the enemy thrice in "one skirmish, and in the last charge hee was shot through "his left thigh (6), to the great grief of his Excellencie and "the whole camp; who being brought to the Lord Lieu-"tenant, his Excellencie said, *O Philip, I am sorry for thy*

"*hurt.*

(6) "A musket shot a little above the left knee, so brake and rifted the bones and "so entered the thigh upward towards the body, as the bullet could not be found "before the body was opened."

Hence Spenser in his Astrophel:

"So as he rag'd amongst that beastly rout,
"A cruel beast of most accursed brood
"Upon him turn'd, (despair makes cowards stout,)
"And with fell tooth, accustomed to blood,
"Launced his thigh with so michievous weight,
"That it both bones and muscles rived quite."

Digitized by Google

" *hurt.* Sir Philip answered, *This have I done to doe you honor,* " *and her Majesty service.* Sir William Russel, coming to him, " kissed his hand, and said with tears, *O noble Sir Philip, there* " *was never man attayned hurt more honorably, than ye have done,* " *or any served like unto you.*" He returned into the camp, and was thence carried in a barge to Arnheim, or, as it is called in his will, to Archam, a city in Guelderland. Between Zutphen and the neighbouring village of Warnsfeldt, stood a monastery of Franciscans, named Galilee, which was destroyed during the Spanish war:—Its ruins were still visible in the year 1702. Two circumstances gave celebrity to this monastery;—not far from it that incomparable hero Sir Philip Sidney, equally illustrious in the arts of peace and war, received his deadly wound:—And *there* resided that monk, who suggested the cruel advice to Frederic the son of the Duke of Alva, that, having taken the city of Zutphen, he should indiscriminately massacre all the inhabitants, and thus *crush the eggs, before the young were hatched* (7).

THE

(7) " Zutphaniam inter, proximumque pagum Warnsfeldium, monasterium fuit " Franciscanorum, quod Galileæ nomen habuit; ejus exigua admodum rudera con- " spiciuntur, tempore enim belli Hispanici dirutum est. Locus duplici de causa insignis, " tum quod, non longe ab hoc monasterio, vulneratus est, unde post Arnhemii mortem " obiit,

Digitized by Google

THE concluding period of life not seldom presents us with the most prominent features of genuine goodness; and it may be truly asserted, that the pages of ancient and modern biography are not illuminated with a brighter pattern of benevolence, fortitude, and invincible patience, than that which was exhibited by Sir Philip Sidney at this most awful season.

As he was returning from the field of battle, pale, languid, and thirsty with excess of bleeding, he asked for water to quench his thirst. The water was brought; and had no sooner approached his lips, than he instantly resigned it to a dying soldier, whose ghastly countenance attracted his notice—speaking these ever-memorable words; "*This man's necessity is still greater than mine.*" Few incidents can afford a more animating and affecting subject to the historical painter (8).

CAN

"obiit, heros incomparabilis, belli pacisque artibus juxta claras, Philippus Sidneius, "Comitis Licestrii ex sorore nepos, anno 1586." *Meter. lib.* 13, *Strad. dec.* 2. *lib.* 8. "tum quod in illo vixerit monachus illa, qui, anno 1572. Frederico, Albani ducis "filio, execrandum illud consilium suggessit, ut, capta urbe, omnes jugularet; *ova "confringeret, antequam pulli ex iis excluderentur.*"

J. Lomeier de Bibliothecis, p. 216.

(8) See the Appendix, No. V.

Digitized by Google

CAN we enough admire that placid demeanour, with which he admonished the chirurgeons who attended him, "to use "their art with freedom, while his strength was yet entire, "his body free from fear, and his mind able to endure?"

AN ode, which was composed by him on the nature of his wound, discovered a mind perfectly serene and calm. These efforts of his expiring muse will not surely subject him to censure and reproach. It is impossible to suggest that they were disfigured by any sentiments of rashness and impiety. They were exercised on a subject of the most serious nature, on a wound which was likely to terminate in death (9). It is deeply to be regretted, that this ode is not now extant.

AT

(9) A ditty or sonnet made by Lord Vaux, representing the image of death, is said to have been written by him on his death-bed. Richard Edwards, a poet in the reign of Elizabeth, composed on his death-bed a pathetic poem entitled "Edwards "souls knell." [Anderson's History of Great Britain, Vol. ii. p. 186, 8vo.]—The complaint of a sinner [made and] sung by the Earl of Essex, upon his death-bed in Ireland, is printed in "The Paradise of Dainty Devices."

Flatman's verses, imitated by Pope, are exquisitely beautiful.

"When on my sick bed I languish,
"Full of sorrow, full of anguish,
"Fainting, gasping, trembling, crying,
"Panting, groaning, speechless, dying,
"Methinks I hear some gentle spirit say,
"'Be not fearful, come away.'"

Digitized by Google

At first, sanguine hopes of his recovery were encouraged, the rumour of which diffused universal joy in England.—But, alas! these hopes were fallacious. The anxious solicitude with which his restoration to health was desired, appears from the rough but artless reply of Count Hollock to his chirurgeon, who had suggested his apprehension that the life of Sir Philip could not be saved. "*Away, villain,* "*never see my face again, till thou bring better news of that man's* "*recovery, for whose redemption many such as I were happily* "*lost* (1)."

LADY SIDNEY, who had accompanied her husband into Zealand, attended him in his last illness, and administered all that assistance and soothing consolation, which the tenderest, and most affectionately sympathizing indulgence could bestow.

—— SUFFERING

(1) Philip, Earl of Hollock, or Hohenlo, in Germany, was Lieutenant-General to Prince Maurice, and instructed him, when young, in the art of war, being an experienced soldier. He married the Prince's eldest sister. He was the head of a party in the Netherlands against the Earl of Leicester. Sir Philip Sidney, by his discreet and prudent conduct, so far conciliated the favour of Hollock, that, though by his means an intimate union and friendship between his uncle and the noble Count could not be accomplished, yet at last a final surcease of all violent jealousies and factious expostulations took place. *Memoirs of the Sidney family, p.* 102.

Digitized by Google

SUFFERING under extreme misery and pain, he had now languished sixteen days on the bed of sickness. His condition was then truly deplorable. "The very shoulder-"bones of this delicate patient were worn through his skin, "with constant and obedient posturing of his body to the "art of the chirurgeon." At length he declared that he smelt what may not unaptly be called the smell of death. Though his attendants did not perceive this, and endeavoured to persuade him that from this circumstance he had no cause to suspect danger, he persevered in his opinion that a mortification had taken place. Sensible of the approach of his dissolution, he prepared himself for death with cheerfulness and fortitude.

THE night before he died, leaning upon a pillow in his bed, he wrote the following short note to Johannes Weierus, physician to the Duke of Cleves, and famed for his learning and professional knowledge. "*Come, my Weierus, come to me,* "*My life is in danger. Dead or alive I will never be ungrateful,* "*I can write no more, but I earnestly entreat you to come without de-*"*lay. Farewell* (2)." Amidst the pangs of bodily pain, he preserved

(2) "Mi Weiere, veni, veni: de vitâ periclitor, et te cupio: nec vivus nec mortuus "ero ingratus: plura non possum: sed obnixè te oro ut festines. Vale."

Johannes

Digitized by Google

served his reason and judgment clear and unclouded. Mr. Mollineux mentions *a large epistle* written by him in this his last illness, and addressed to Belearius, an eminent divine, in a very pure and elegant Latin style; a copy whereof, for the excellency of the phrase, and pithiness of the matter, was presented to the Queen. All these particulars fully manifest that composure and tranquillity, with which he prepared himself to meet death.

A soldier dying a christian death is a noble and animating spectacle. The military character is then really great, when it is exalted by the genuine virtues of a Christian. Our illustrious and gallant knight, while he retained a calm and undisturbed spirit, made a public confession of his faith to the holy ministers of religion, who encircled his bed, to men eminent for their goodness and edifying piety. This confession is said to have been such as no book but the heart could truly and feelingly deliver. They then accompanied him at his own earnest request in a devout prayer dictated by himself, and uttered with much energy and affection; the free and fervent effusion of a heart deeply penetrated with

Johannes Weierus was the pupil and domestic of Cornelius Agrippa, whom he vindicated from the charges brought against him by his enemies, as if he had been a magician, and held an intimate intercourse with dæmons.

Digitized by Google

with a true sense of sin. "His sins," he said, "were best "known to himself, and out of that true sense he was more "properly instructed to apply the eternal sacrifice of our "Saviour's passion and merits to himself." Is there any real foundation for blame in this part of his behaviour? It can never be urged with propriety that a private person in his own chamber, and in his last moments, offering up an extempore prayer, and soliciting the fervent concurrence of his surrounding friends, affords a precedent of "public "worship led by a layman;" nor can we hence conclude that Sir Philip Sidney professed a religion peculiar to himself, or in any degree different from that which was then established in the church of England, or that he derived any singular sentiments on this subject from Hubert Languet, in whose letters nothing can be discovered that tends to create such a suspicion.

In the course of his illness, he introduced a topic of conversation, the most serious and the most sublime that can engage the attention of man—"the immortality of the "soul." The conjectures of pagan philosophy on this interesting theme were compared with the sacred truths of revelation comprised in the old and new testament. This discussion was not undertaken to remove doubt, or to satisfy

Digitized by Google

a vain and idle curiosity, but rather to exhilarate his drooping spirits, to increase his faith, and to enliven his expectations of future blessedness.

HAVING affixed a codicil to his will on the seventeenth day of October, the day on which he died, he called for music, and particularly for the ode above-mentioned, to procure repose to his disordered frame (3). In the language of the poet,

" Music the fiercest grief can charm,
" And Fate's severest rage disarm:
" Music can soften pain to ease,
" And make despair and madness please;
" Our joys below it can improve,
" And antedate the bliss above."

THUS was his mind soothed and tranquillized, anticipating, as it were, those delightful strains of celestial melody, with which the angelic choir encompass the throne

(3) An English Officer of distinguished courage, the companion of my earlier years, was dangerously wounded in battle. A few minutes previous to his death, he directed a piece of solemn music to be played in his tent, and expired during the performance.

Of Queen Elizabeth it is recorded, that, " in the hour of her departure, she ordered " her musicians into her chamber, and died hearing them."

Hawkin's History of Music, Vol. v. p. 201.

Digitized by Google

throne of God. With a patient submission to the divine will, that could proceed only from the retrospect of a good life, he bade adieu to his most afflicted brother, in words which deserve to be engraven in letters of gold. "Love "my memory, cherish my friends: their faith to me may "assure you that they are honest. But above all, govern "your will and affection by the will and word of your "Creator, in me beholding the end of this world with all "her vanities." In allusion to this instructive lesson of valedictory admonition, are the following lines of Spenser:

"Behold—and by ensample see
"That all is vanity and grief of mind.
"No other comfort in this world can be,
"But hope of heaven, and heart to God inclin'd,
"For all the rest must needs be left behind." *Ruins of Time.*

He died in the arms of his dear friend, Mr. William Temple (4). The cause in which he fought and bravely

——— fell,

(4) This gentleman did not omit to celebrate the fame of his patron and friend.

Gulielmi Temple in Philippum Sydnæum Tetrastychon.

Si Virtus aut ulla Charis, si Pieris ulla
Nescia letiferæ debuit esse viæ;
Qui Charis et Virtus fueras, qui Pieris ipsa,
Quot debebantur secla, Philippe, tibi?

Ejusdem

Digitized by Google

fell, was just and honourable, the cause of freedom and religion against Spanish tyranny and Spanish superstition. Thus was he immaturely cut off, like another Marcellus, beloved and regretted—in the flower and vigour of his age, while his mental powers retained their activity and force, while the passion for life was strong, and the aversion to death violent. His secular hopes were extinguished, his schemes of military glory, his ambition to have his name immortalized in the list of great generals, vanished into air. He was removed by death at the very beginning, as it were, of his honourable race; as he was just entering into the fields of glory. While the days, that were past, seemed to be preludes of some future extraordinary greatness, preparatory to the display of those transcendent abilities, which were ready to be more amply exerted for the good of mankind, in the different capacities of a scholar, a states-

man,

Ejusdem in eundem Epitaphium.

Quis jacet hic? Sidneius. Qualis? Nobilis ortu,
Ingenio Pallas, corde Gradivus erat.
Ut cecidit? cecidit Geldris congressus in arvis,
Hostica dum forti dissipat arma manu.
Nunquid morte pius? totus pietate reluxit:
Sic illi fixus pectore Christus erat.

In obit D. Phil. Sidneii Acad. Cantab. lachrymæ, p. 85. 86.

Digitized by Google

man, and a soldier, behold! a sudden destruction overwhelms him. See here an affecting and melancholy instance of the vanity of all sublunary pursuits. The foundation was laid—the edifice was rising—the towers were advancing in height, when ruin seizes the unfinished work, and by some unforeseen accident the noble structure moulders into dissolution.

> "Fame is the spur that the clear spirit doth raise
> "To scorn delights, and live laborious days:
> "But the fair guerdon when we hope to find,
> "And think to burst out into sudden blaze,
> "Comes the blind Fury with th' abhorred shears
> "And slits the thin-spun life." *Milton's Lycidas.*

If it had pleased Divine Providence to have protracted the term of his earthly existence, what advantages might not have flowed to the public? If his early years were productive of good fruit, what might not have been expected from a more mature or a more advanced age?

SUCH is the account given of the death of Sir Philip Sidney by Sir Fulke Grevile, and others his contemporaries, who have however omitted to particularize several circumstances relative to this scene of sorrow. A detail of his behaviour during his last illness is extant in a manuscript,

Digitized by Google

somewhat imperfect, which is deposited in the British museum (5). The insertion of it cannot be deemed a mere repetition of what has been already related. Indeed the private conferences between the dying hero, and his affectionate attendant, admitted into the secret recesses of his soul, appear peculiarly interesting. From the reiterated perusal of it, the reader may probably derive no small portion of satisfaction and improvement. Nor can any subject of contemplation be, to a thoughtful mind, more important, than the view of a good man, awaiting the approach of death under the pressure of languishment and pain. Mr. Giffard (6), the author of the following detail, begins his narrative by observing, that, whilst it was a pleasing reflexion, that Sir Philip Sidney lost his life in the defence of his religion, prince, and country; "so can it not but "work much grief in all good minds, and especially in those "where bonds of nature and friendship are fast knit and "tyed. This grief," he adds, "is greatly assuaged, when "it

(5) The MS. in the British Museum is marked Vitellius "C. 17, 382."

(6) Probably Mr. George Giffard or Gifford, mentioned by Anthony Wood, as "a very noted preacher, and one most admirably versed in several sorts of learning, "which were very rare and much in esteem in his time. Sir Philip names him in his "will: 'Item, I give to Mr. Giffard, twenty pounds.'"

Digitized by Google

" it is well known, that the party so well beloved hath re-
" ceived no damage by death, but by many degrees hath
" bettered his estate; which doth move me, being with him
" for the space of seventeen or eighteen days before his
" death, and even then unto his last breath, to sett down for
" the comfort of those which did love him dearlie, a brefe
" note not of all, for then I should write a lardge book, but of
" the most especiall things, whereby he declared his unfayned
" faith and speciall worke of grace, which gave proof that his
" end was undoubtedly happy.

" AFTER he had received his deadlie stroke; being come
" back into the camp, and lying in a tent, he lift up his eyes
" towards the heavens, not imputing it unto happ or chaunce,
" but with full resolution affirmed, that God did send the
" bullet (7), and commanded it to stryke him (8).

" BEING

(7) It has been suggested that the bullet, with which he was wounded, was poisoned:

" Impius ignavum prædo in te destinat ictum,
" Crusque *venenato* figit equestre *globo*." *Ph. Sidnæi Peplus*, p. 16.

..... " crura tumescunt;
" Tincta *venenato* Lernææ *sanguine Echidnæ*
" Est pila; vulnus alit virus; spes nulla salutis."

In obitum D. Phil. Sidnæi, Acad. Cantab. Lacryma, p. 18.

(8) On later times King William III. used to say that every bullet had its billet—its particular direction assigned to it by Providence, where it should strike.

Digitized by Google

"BEING advertised that a man so chastened should "humble himself and seek to assuage the anger of God, "and to be reconciled to him, he fixed his eyes upon the "heavens, confessed and acknowledged his guilt, and re- "turned thanks to God, that *he did not stryke him to death at "once, but gave him space to seek repentance and reconciliation.* "Hereupon he did not only enter into a deep consideration "of those things wherein he had offended God, but also "with great remorse sought how to turne away his "displeasure, and to mitigate his anger.

"EIGHT days after he was stricken, at which time he sent "for Mr. Giffard, the guilt of sin, the present beholding of "death, the terror of God's judgment-seat, which seemed in "hot displeasure to cut him down, concurring, did make a "fear and astonishment in mind, which he did overcome, "after conference had, both touching the doctrine and "example of the scriptures in that matter, where it was "proved unto him that the great servants of God were "astonished with horror and fear of God's wrath in their "grievous afflictions: otherwise how should they be taught "obedience and reverence to stand in awe of their father? "how should they be made conformable to Christ in "suffering, if they should feel no terrors of God's wrath in "their soul for sin?

Digitized by Google

" AFTER much serious conversation on the design of God " in afflicting the children of men, ' with greate chearfulness " ' he did often lift up his eyes and handes, giving thanks to " ' God that he did chastise him with a loving and fatherlie " ' coercion, and to his singular profitt, whether the soul " ' live or die.'

" BEING advertised that David and other holy men of God, " in time of their extreme danger, did call to God for help, " and solemnly vowed to sett forth the praises of God, when " he should deliver them—that he should do the like, it " were very good—that is, to vow with an unfeigned heart " and full purpose, if God should give him life, to consecrate " the same to his service, and to make his glory the mark of " all his actions. To this he answered in words expressive " of his unfeigned repentance, and of his firm resolution not " to live, ' as he had done, for he had walked in a vague " ' course.' And these words he spake with great vehe- " mence both of speech and gesture, and doubled it, to " the intent that it might be manifest how unfeignedly he " meant to turn more thoughts unto God, than ever before.

" CONTINUING thus, certain days, very desirous of con- " ference out of the holy scriptures, he requested that some

Digitized by Google

" godly book might be gotten to be read unto him, which " might, as he said, increase mortification and confirm his " mind.

" He did also sundry times complain that his mind was " dull in prayer, and that his thought did not ascend up so " quick as he desired: For having before in manful sort " intreated the Lord with fervent prayer, he thought he " should at all times feel that fervency, and was grieved " when he found any thought interrupting the same, ' and " ' for the power of God's word how great knowledge is " ' there,' said he, ' and how little do men feel the power " ' and working of the same, which is inward.'

" At another time, lying silent, of a sudden he brake " forth into expressions denoting his sense of the wretched- " ness of man, ' a poor worm,'—of the mercies of God— " of the dispensations of Providence that reacheth unto " all things: and this he did with vehement gesture, and " great joy, even ravished with the consideration of God's " omnipotency, providence, and goodness, of whose fatherly " love in remembering to chasten him for his good he now " felt, adding how unsearchable the misteries of God's " word are.

Digitized by Google

" He did grow weaker and weaker in body, and thereby
" gathered that he should dye, which caused him to enter
" yet into a more earnest consideration of himself, what
" assurance he had of salvation: and having by the pro-
" mises of God, and testimony of his grace, which he felt
" working in him, gathered his assurance of God's favor unto
" eternal life, and made him perceive that he did chastise
" him as a most kind father, to fashion him to his will; he
" said that he feared not to dye, but he was afraid lest the
" pangs of his death should be so grievous, that he might lose
" his understanding: and this fear did much disturb him.

" Being demanded whether he did not desire life merely
" to glorify God, if he should now give him his life, which
" were in a manner all one as to raise him from the dead, he
" answered, ' I have vowed my life unto God; and yf the
" ' Lord cut me off and suffer me to live no longer, then I
" ' shall glorify him, and give up myself to his service.'

" The night before he died, towards the morning I asked
" him how he did? He answered: ' I feel myself more weak.'
" ' I trust' said I, ' you are well, and throughly prepared for
" ' death, yf God shall call you.' At this he made a little
" pause, and then he answered, ' I have a doubt: pray re-

Digitized by Google

" ' solve me in it. I have not slept this night: I have verie
" ' earnesthe and humblie besought the Lord to give me some
" ' sleep: he hath denied it: this causeth me to doubt that
" ' God doth not regard me, nor heare any of my prayers:
" ' this doth trouble me.' Answer was made, that for mat-
" ters touching salvation or pardon of our sins through Christ,
" he gave an absolute promise; but for things concerning
" this life God hath promised them, but with caution: that
" which he hath absolutely promised we may assuredly look
" to receive, craving in faith that which he hath thus pro-
" mised. ' I am,' said he, ' fully satisfied, and resolved with
" ' this answer. No doubt it is even so: then I will submitt
" ' myself to his will in these outward things.' He added
" further, ' I had this night a trouble in my mynd: for
" ' searching myself, methought I had not a full and sure
" ' hould of Christ. After I had continued in this perplexitie
" ' awhyle, how strangelie God did deliver me? for it was a
" ' strange deliveraunce which I had. There came to my
" ' remembraunce a vanity in which I delighted, whereof I
" ' had not rid myself. I rid myself of it, and presently my
" ' joie and comfort returned.'—Within a few hours after, I
" told him that I thought his death did approach, which in-
" deed he well perceived, and for which he prepared himself.
" His fear that death would take away his understanding did

Digitized by Google

" continue. 'I doe,' said he, 'with trembling hart most hum-
" 'blie intreat the Lord that the pangs of death may not be
" 'so grievous, as to take away my understanding.'

" It was proved to him by testimonies and infallible rea-
" sons out of the scriptures, that, although his understand-
" ing and senses should fail, yet that faith, which he had
" now, could not fail, but would hold still the power and
" victory before God: yea in that respect all one, as if he
" had his senses and understanding. At this he did with a
" chearful and smiling countenance put forth his hand, and
" slappt me softlie on the cheeks.—Not long after he lift
" up his eyes and hands, uttering these words, 'I would not
" 'chaunge my joye for the empire of the worlde;' for the
" nearer he saw death approach, the more his comfort
" seemed to increase.

" And after this, for the space of three or four hours, he
" did still call to be spoken unto out of the word of God.
" As long as it was not grievous to him to speak, he would
" make answer; and, if any testimonie alledged seemed
" hard, he would ask the meaning, and, if there were any
" interruption of speech he would by and by call and say,
" 'I praye you speak unto me still'—in the midst of these

Digitized by Google

" speeches which were for the confirming of faith to gather
" an assurance of God's law, touching the vanity of this
" life—the victory of Christ over death—and the glory
" which the body shall have at the resurrection—and that
" present felicity which the soul should be admitted to by
" the holy angels.

" As the light of a lamp is continued by pouring in of
" oyl, so he sought to have the burning zeal and flame of
" his prayer, upon which his heart was still bent, cherished
" by the comforts of the holy word: accounting it a great
" injury if we did not seek to give wings to his faith to carry
" up his prayers speedily, uttering grief when he felt any
" thought interrupting him.

" And although he had professed the gospel, loved and
" favored those which did embrace it, entered deeply into
" the concerns of the church, taken good order and very
" good care for his family and soldiers to be instructed, and
" to be brought to live accordingly, yet entering into deep
" examination of his life now in the time of his affliction, he
" felt these inward motions and workings of (9)—exciting
" him to a deep sorrow for his former conduct.

" Having

(9) Here the MS. is imperfect.

Digitized by Google

" HAVING made a comparison of God's grace now in him, " his former virtues seemed to be nothing; for he wholly " condemned his former life. For there being a learned " man which could speak no English, he spake to him in " Latin. Among other things, he uttered this,—that godly " men in time of extreme afflictions did comfort and sup- " port themselves with the remembrance of their former " life in which *they had glorified God.* ' It is not,' he said, " ' so in me. I have no comfort that waye: all things in " ' my former life have been vaine, vaine, vaine.'

" PERCEIVING that death did approach, he did with a few " short speeches, for it was too grievous for him to speak " much, exhort his brethren in loving manner, giving in- " struction in some points, and to learn by him that all " things here are vanity.

" HIS speech failing, he made sign with his hand to be " still spoken to, and could less endure that I should make " any intermission; even as one that runneth a race, when " he approacheth unto the end, doth straine himself most " vehemently: he would have the help that might be to " carry him forward, now in the very end of his race, to " the goal.

Digitized by Google

"IT now seemed as if all natural heat and life were al-
"most utterly gone out of him, that his understanding had
"failed, and that it was to no purpose to speak any more
"unto him. But it was far otherwise. I spake thus unto
"him: 'Sir, if you heare what I saye, let us by some means
"'know it, and if you have still your inward joy and con-
"'solation in God, hould up your hand.' With that he
"did lift up his hand, and stretched it forth on high (1),
"which we thought he could scarce have moved, which
"caused the beholders to cry out with joy, that his under-
"standing should be still so perfect, and that the weak
"body beyond all expectation should so readily give a sign

——

"of

(1) The reader will recollect that fine passage in Shakespeare, which affords a perfect contrast to the scene before us.

War. See how the pangs of death do make him grin!
Sal. Disturb him not, let him pass peaceably.
K. Hen. Peace to his soul, if God's good pleasure be!——
Lord Cardinal, if thou think'st on heaven's bliss,
Hold up thy hand, make signal of thy hope.——
He dies, and makes no sign. O God, forgive him.
War. So bad a death argues a monstrous life.
K. Hen. Forbear to judge, for we are sinners all.

Second part of King Henry VI. A. iii. Sc. 3.

See the excellent criticism on this passage by Mr. John Hughes, in the Spectator, No. 210.

Digitized by Google

"of the joy of the soul. After this, requiring of him to lift "up his hands to God, seeing he could not speak or open "his eyes—that we might see his heart still prayed, he "raised both his hands, and sett them together on his breast, "and held them upwards after the manner of those which "make humble petitions: and so his hands did remain, "and even so stiff, that they would have so continued stand- "ing up, being once so sett, but that we took the one from "the other.

"THUS his hearing going away, we commended him to "God divers times by prayer, and at the last he yielded "up his spirit into the hands of God, unto his most happy "comfort."

"HE died," saith one of his dearest friends, "not lan- "guishing in idleness, riot, and excess, not as overcome "with nice pleasures and fond vanities; but of manly "wounds received in the service of his prince, in defence "of persons oppressed, in maintenance of the only true "Catholick and Christian religion, among the noble, "valiant, and wise, in the open field, in martial manner, "the honorablest death that could be desired, and best "beseeming a Christian knight, whereby he hath worthily

Digitized by Google

"won to himself immortal fame among the godly, and left "example worthy of imitation to others of his calling."

HE had just arrived at the age of thirty-two years: the same period of time which terminated the career of Alexander the great. How different was their close of life! The latter fell a victim to the most debasing intemperance. That invincible hero, who escaped unhurt from the fatigues of long marches, from the violent extremes of heat and cold, from the horrours and dangers of war, was subdued by ebriety (2). The fatal cup of Hercules accomplished the vengeance due to his unjust ambition. His premature death gave occasion to his surviving friends to express their sorrow and resentment, that he was snatched from the earth in the flower of his age and in the midst of his prosperity. Sir Philip Sidney, on the contrary, expired in the full enjoyment of a fame pure and unsullied, enriched with all the virtues which dignify and adorn humanity.

THE writer of that severe invective, entitled "Leicester's Ghost," while he highly extols the virtues of Sir Philip Sidney,

(2) "Alexandrum tot itinera, tot prælia, tot hyemes per quas victâ temporum "locorumque difficultate transierat, tot flumina ex ignoto cadentia, tot maria tutum "dimiserunt: intemperantia bibendi et ille Herculeanus ac fatalis scyphus condidit."

Senecæ, Epist. 83.

Digitized by Google

Sidney, conveys a cruel insinuation against the Earl of Leicester, as if his excellency had intentionally neglected to send a necessary supply of force to relieve the troops that were in the engagement near Zutphen:

> And that, which to my heart might more griefe strike,
> Hapned the death of that renowned knight:
> My nephew Sidney near Coleston dike
> Receiv'd his deadly wound through Fortune's spight,
> I sent no fresh supply to him out right,
> I was not farre off with a mighty hoast,
> So with his loss of life some fame I lost.

Leicester's own relation of the disaster, written the day of the battle, clearly shows the state of a mind grievously distressed and most deeply afflicted at the melancholy event. "This young manne, he was my greatest comforte, next "her Majestie, of all the worlde, and, if I could buy "his lieffe, with all I have, to my sherte, I would give yt. "How God will dispose of him I know not, but feare I "must needes greatly the worste; the blow in so dan- "gerous a place and so great; yet did I never hear of any "manne that did abide the dressinge and settinge his bones "better than he did. And he was carried afterwards in my "barge to Arnheim, and I heare this daye he ys still of "good hearte, and comforteth all aboute him as much as

Digitized by Google

" may be. 'God of his mercie graunt me his lieffe, which " I cannot but doubt of greately. I was abrode that tyme " in the fielde, givinge some order to supplie that business, " which did indure almost twoe owres in continuall fighte, " and meetinge Philip commynge on horsebacke, not a little " to my greafe.—Well, I praye God, yf it be his will, save " me his lieffe; even as well for her Majestie's service sake, " as for myne own comforte."

We cannot suspect his sincerity, or doubt the genuineness of his sorrow, when he solemnly acknowledged the superior merit of his deceased nephew, by declaring that— " when he undertook the government of the Low Countries, " he held up the honor of his casual authority by him, " whilst he lived, and found reason to withdraw himself " from that burden after his death."

So long as the following letter is extant, there can never be wanting a strong and most decided attestation, that an eulogy on Sir Philip Sidney was deemed particularly acceptable to this his noble relative (3).

——

Thomas

(3) From the Sidney papers, Vol. i. p.393.

Digitized by Google

Thomas Lord Buckehurst, to Robert Dudley Earl of Leicester.

"My very good Lord,

"WITH great grief do I write these lines unto you, being "thereby forced to renew to your remembrance the decease "of that noble gentleman, your nephew, by whose death "not only your Lordship, and all other his frends and "kindsfolks, but even her Majestie and the whole realm "besides do suffer no small loss and detriment. Neverthe-"less it may not bring the least comfort unto you; that as "he hath both lived and died in fame of honour and re-"putation to his name, in the worthy service of his "prince and country, and with as great love in his life, "and with as many tears for his death, as ever any "had; so hath he also, by his good and godly end, "so greatly testified the assurance of God's infinite mercy "towards him, as there is no doubt but that he now "liveth with immortality, free from the cares and ca-"lamities of mortal misery; and in place thereof re-"maineth filled with all heavenly joys and felicities, such "as cannot be expressed: so that I doubt not but that your "Lordship in wisdom, after you have yielded some while "to the imperfection of man's nature, will yet in time re-"member how happy in truth he is, and how miserable and "blind we are, that lament his blessed change. Her Ma-

Digitized by Google

"jestie seemeth resolute, to call home your Lordship, and "intendeth presently to think of some fit personage, that "may take your place and charge. And in my opinion, "her Majesty had never more cause to wish you here than "now. I pray God send it speedily. I shall not need to "enlarge my letter with any other matters, for that this "messenger, your Lordship's wholly devoted, can suf- "ficientlie inform you of all. And so wishing all comfort "and contentacion unto your Lordship, I rest your Lord- "ship's wholly for ever, to use and command as your own. "From the court this 3d day of November 1586.

"Your Lordship's most assured to command,

"T. BUCKEHURST(4)."

AFTER this fatal catastrophe of the death of Sir Philip Sidney, an ineffectual assault was made upon the town of Zutphen. But the approach of winter caused the siege to be raised, although one of the forts of Zutphen was taken by

an

(4) Dr. Bartholomew Clerk thus writes to the Earl of Leicester: "All take most "heavely (as we all have cause to doe) the unfortunate death of your noble nephew; "whose like, as far as I am able to judge, for his time and years in all respects, I never "found, nether in England, France, or Germany. I know I want judgment to re- "new greefe by thease lines in your noble mind, but mine own greefe wold not "suffer silence."—*MS. in the British Museum. Galba. C.* 10. 73.

Digitized by Google

an extraordinary incident. Edward Stanley, an officer in Leicester's army, seized the launce or pike with which a Spaniard assailed him, held it fast, and suffered himself to be raised up by his competitor. The garrison, struck with terrour at his appearance, and supposing that the whole English force had gained admission, abandoned the place by a precipitate flight (5). For this gallant action Stanley was knighted by the Earl of Leicester.

---

(5) The classic reader will recollect a similar situation of Turnus in Virgil's Æn. IX. 728; and of Alexander in Q. Curtius. L. IX. s. 45. — very uncle indeed — very familiar —

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

THE CHARACTER OF SIR PHILIP SIDNEY—HIS FAMILY—HIS FRIENDS—HIS WRITINGS.

A GENERAL mourning for the death of Sir Philip Sidney was observed among those of higher rank; "no gentleman "for many months appearing in a gay or gawdy dress "either in the city or the court." And this is presumed to be the first instance in England of a public mourning for a private person. It has been justly remarked, that "the par- "tiality of an individual may mistake the qualities of a "friend; but the testimony of a whole nation places his "merits beyond dispute." Even the hard heart of Philip of Spain was softened into sorrow on this lamentable occasion. And when it was first announced to his secretary Don Bernadine de Mendoza, he is said to have used words to this purpose, "That however glad he was King Philip "his master had lost, in a private gentleman, an enemy to

Digitized by Google

" his estate, yet he could not but lament to see Christendom " deprived of so rare a light in these cloudy times, and " bewail poor Widow England;" so he termed her, " that " having been many years in breeding one eminent spirit, " was in a moment bereaved of him." The states of Holland earnestly petitioned to have the honour of burying his body at the national expense; engaging themselves to erect for him as fair a monument as any prince had in Christendom. This petition was rejected, the Queen having determined to manifest her veneration for his memory by directing his obsequy at her own cost, and with all the magnificence and solemnities due to a noble soldier. His body was removed to Flushing, and embarked there on the first day of November, " attended by the English garrison, which " were twelve hundred, marching by three and three, the " shott hanging down their pieces, the halberts, pykes, and " enseignes trayling along the ground, drums and fyfes play- " ing very softly. The body was covered with a paule of " velvet: the burgers of the towne followed mourning, and, " so soon as he was embarked, the small shott gave him a " triple vollye: then all the great ordinaunce about the " walles were discharged twice, and so took their leave of " their well-beloved governour. From thence he was trans- " ported in a pynnis of his own, all her sayles, tackling, and

Digitized by Google

" other furniture were coloured black, and blacke clothe " hanged rounde about her with escouchions of his arms, " and she was accompanyed with divers other shipps (6)."

ON the fifth day of November, his remains were landed at Tower-hill, London, and conveyed to the Minories in Aldgate, where they lay in state (7). On the sixteenth day of February following, they were deposited in St. Paul's cathe-

(6) From the account prefixed to Lant's description of the funeral procession of Sir Philip Sidney, mentioned in a subsequent note.

" Navis, qua honoratissimi Sidneii corpus Flushingâ Londinum advehebatur, de suo " atro apparatu et nobilitate vecturæ, Authore Gulielmo Temple.

" Cur atra sim quæris? Sidneii ad sidera rapti
" En veho per tumidas nobile corpus aquas.
" Parcite jam fluctus, adversi parcite venti:
" Nobilius corpus num tulit ulla ratis?

In obitum D. Phil. Sidnei Acad. Cantab. lachrymæ, p. 86.

(7) To this circumstance Spenser is supposed to allude.

" ——— I saw an arke of purest golde,
" Upon a brazen pillour standing hie,
" Which th' ashes seem'd of some great prince to hold
" Enclos'd therein for endless memorie
" Of him whom all the world did glorifie:
" Seemed the heavens with the earth did disagree
" Whether should of these ashes keepers be."

The Ruins of Time. 659

Digitized by Google

cathedral, with a celebrity and pomp that far exceeded the funeral of a private citizen (8). The procession was begun by thirty-two poor men, for he was so many years old. His brother Sir Robert Sidney was the chief mourner. The pall was supported by the Earls of Huntingdon, Leicester, Essex, and Pembroke, and the Barons Willoughby and North. They were followed by a very numerous train, and among others by seven representatives of the Seven United Provinces "clothed in black"—by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London on horseback in their scarlet gowns lined with ermine—by the company of grocers in their livery gowns, to the number of one hundred and twenty, Sir Philip being free of their company.

——

ON

(8) A representation of this solemnity is given in a roll containing the manner of the whole proceeding at the funeral of Sir Philip Sidney, which was celebrated at St. Paul's cathedral 16 Feb. MDLXXXVI. in the self-same order as the mourners were marshalled by Rob. Cook, alias Clarencieux, drawn and invented by Thomas Lant, gent. and graven in copper by Theod. de Bry, London, MDLXXXVII. This roll is in length thirty-eight feet and some inches, in breadth seven inches and three quarters, and contains three hundred and forty-four figures.

A copy of this roll is in the Pepysian library at Magdalen college, Cambridge.—Thomas Lant was portcullis pursuivant to Queen Elizabeth, and the author of a treatise of heraldry. Around a portrait of him prefixed to that Treatise is this inscription:

"God createth; Man imagineth.

"Vertu flourisheth; Death finisheth.

"God is my Lot."

Digitized by Google

On a pillar in the choir of St. Paul's there hung formerly a tablet with the following inscription.

"England, Netherland, the heavens and the arts,
"The soldier and the world have made six parts
"Of the noble SIDNEY, for none will suppose,
"That a small heap of stones can SIDNEY enclose:
"His body hath England, for she it bred,
"Netherlands his blood in her defence shed.
"The heavens have his soul, the arts have his fame,
"All soldiers the grief, the world his good name (9)."

AMONG the monuments and tombs engraven by Hollar in Sir William Dugdale's history of St. Paul's cathedral, there

——— doth

(9) These lines are taken from a French epigram by Isaac du Bellay on the Sieur de Bonnivet.

"La France, et le Piemont, les cieux et les arts,
"Les soldats et le monde ont fait comme de six parts
"De ce grand Bonnivet: car une si grand chose
"Dedans un seul tombeau ne pouvoit estre enclose.
"La France en a le corps qu'elle avoit elevé,
"Le Piemont a le cœur qu'il avoit eprouvé.
"Les cieux en ont l'esprit, et les arts la memoire,
"Les soldats le regret, et le monde la gloire."

And in an epitaph on Sir Philip Sidney in Spenser's works, 12mo, Vol. V. p. 284, are the following lines:

"England doth hold thy limbs, that bred the same;
"Flanders thy valour, where it last was tried;
"The camp thy sorrow, where thy body died;
"Thy friends thy want, the world thy virtue's fame.

Digitized by Google

doth not appear to have been one for Sir Philip Sidney. No kind friend, no surviving relative, erected any other memorial to him, than the tablet above-mentioned, conscious, as it were, that his fame did not require aid from brass or marble.

THE Queen was deeply afflicted at the death of so brave and loyal a subject. When Lord Nottingham once applied to her in favour of Sir Robert Sidney, who had requested to be recalled from his government at Flushing, she answered—"that he was descended of noble blood—that his "ancestors had been famous members of her estate—that "she had a special great loss of them, and much lamented "the untimely death of his brother Sir Philip Sidney; but "she had cause to rejoice he yet remained, whose worth and "sufficiency she had tried in many services abroad."

HE was succeeded in the office of governor of Flushing by his very good friend Sir William Russel, the youngest son of Francis the second Earl of Bedford (9). This excellent soldier, being general of the horse in the United

——— Pro-

(9) He names him in his will. "I give and bequeath to my very good friend Sir "William Russel, my best gilted armour."

Digitized by Google

Provinces, was present at the battle of Zutphen, where he displayed the most astonishing proofs of his courage. Stowe has given a particular account of his prowess: "He charged "so terribly, that, after he had broke his lance, he so plaid "his part with his cuttle-axe, that the enemy reported him "to be a devil and not a man; for where he saw six or "seven of the enemies together, thither would he, and so "behave with his cuttle-axe, that he would separate their "friendship (1)."

His will was dated on the thirtieth day of September 1586. It will not surely be thought unseasonable to remark, that the preamble of it is expressed in that language of Christian piety, which was then generally used, but which

——— the

(1) "Stowe's Chronicle," p. 737. Others of our countrymen nobly distinguished themselves at the battle of Zutphen: as Sir John Norris, Sir William Stanley, Lord Willoughby celebrated in the famous song of "brave Lord Willoughby," the son of that truly excellent woman Katherine Duchess of Suffolk, and Baroness Willoughby, of Eresby, whose sufferings for her adherence to the Protestant religion are recorded by Dr. Fuller.

A very striking instance occurred in the behaviour of Lord North, "who, though "he had been bruised in the knee with a muskit shot, yet, leaving his bed, hastened "to the skirmish, one boot on and the other off, and went to the matter very lustily."

The Earl of Leicester's letter to Sir Thomas Heneage, in the Sidney papers.

Digitized by Google

the refinement of modern times has relinquished; as if a religious formulary was inconsistent with our frame of mind at that awful period, when the idea of our mortality should be particularly impressive. "In the name of God. Amen. "I Sir Philip Sidney knight, sore wounded in body, but "whole in mind, do make this my last will and testament "in manner and form following: First, I bequeath my "soul to Almighty God that gave it me, and my body to "the dust from whence it came."—This his last will affords a pleasing testimony of a most beneficent and humane disposition. He enumerates in it many of his domestics, names their faithful and affectionate services, recommends some of them to the protection of his friends, and assigns liberal bequests to them all. For one of them, who was a prisoner of war, he manifests a more than usual anxiety, that he might be delivered from his miserable captivity. Such marks of attention, however trifling they may appear, exhibit a mind feelingly alive to the distresses of others—a nature full of the milk of human kindness. Mr. Strype has quoted a clause of Sir Philip Sidney's will, as a proof of his justice and integrity among his other admirable qualities: "Item, I will and absolutely authorize "Sir Francis Walsingham and my brother Robert Sidney, "or either of them, to sell so much of my lands lying within

Digitized by Google

" the countys of Lincoln, Sussex, or Southampton, as shall " pay all my debts, as well those of my father deceased, as " of mine own, beseeching them to hasten the same, and to " pay the creditors with all possible speed, according to that " letter of attorney which Sir Francis Walsingham already " hath, sealed and subscribed by me to that end. Which " letter of attorney I do hereby confirm and ratifie, so far " forth, as concerneth for that purpose to all effects of law." He seems to have been most eagerly desirous of accomplishing this last and essentially necessary act of justice, by directing every legal measure to be pursued for that end (2).

NEVER was the Italian adage more strongly verified:

" Chi semina virtu fama raccoglie (3)."

How happily has the venerable Camden pourtrayed the pre-eminence of his character!

" PHILIP SIDNEY, not to be omitted here without an un-" pardonable crime, the great glory of his family, the great

——

" hopes

(2) " Strype's Annals." Vol. iii. p. 445.

(3) " Il y a deux Philippes, beaux esprits, de quels les noms se ressemblent—de " Mornay—de Mornix. [Baudius y en ajoute un troisieme, et avec raison, Philippe " Sidney."].....*Scaligerana.*

Digitized by Google

"hopes of mankind, the most lively pattern of virtue and "the darling of the world, nobly engaging the enemy at "Zutphen in Guelderland, lost his life bravely and vali- "antly. This is that Sidney, whom as Providence seems to "have sent into the world to give the present age a speci- "men of the antients, so did it on a sudden recall him, and "snatch him from us, as more worthy of heaven than of "earth. Thus when virtue is come to perfection, it "presently leaves us, and the best things are seldom "lasting. Rest then in peace, O Sidney, if I may be "allowed this address. We will not celebrate thy memory "with tears but with admiration. 'Whatever we loved in "'thee,' (as the best author speaks of the best governor of "Britain,) 'whatever we admired in thee continues, and "'will continue in the memories of men, the revolutions of "'ages, and the annals of time (4). Many as inglorious and "'ignoble are buried in oblivion, but Sidney shall live to "'all posterity.' For, as the Greek Poet has it, 'Virtue's "'beyond the reach of Fate (5).'"

In

(4) "Quicquid ex Agricola amavimus, quicquid mirati sumus, manet mansurumque "est in animis hominum, in æternitate temporum, famâ rerum."

C. Cornelii Taciti Julii Agricolæ Vita, 46.

(5) —— *ἄφιτοι κρείσσονες εἰσι μοίρης.*

From an epigram of Julianus Ægyptius. See "Jacob's Anthologia," Vol. iii. and "Brunck's Anthol." T. ii. p. 509.

Digitized by Google

In those beautiful verses of Thomson, "the poet of the "Seasons," wherein he celebrates the sons of glory, "who "have adorned Britain," it would have been unpardonable in him to have omitted Sir Philip Sidney, one of the first among "the numerous worthies of the Maiden Reign."

"Nor can the muse the gallant SIDNEY pass,
"The plume of war! with early laurels crown'd,
"The lover's myrtle, and the poet's bay." *Summer, v.* 1510.

The death of Sir Philip Sidney was the cause of deep regret to his dear and intimate friend du Plessis, who wrote the following Letter to Sir Francis Walsingham on the melancholy event:

"Sir, *Jan.* 1587.

"I have been made acquainted with the melancholy news "of the death of Mr. Sidney. I have experienced troubles "and disappointments in these miserable times, but nothing "which lay heavier upon me, nor so struck me to the heart, "no private or public calamity which ever so sensiby affected "me. I feel it deeply, both on your account and my own. "I bewail his loss, and regret him; not for England only, "but for all Christendom. The Almighty has envied us the "possession of him, judging him perhaps worthy of a better

Digitized by Google

"world. But assuredly at no time could his departure have "been less expedient than at present, if God intended to "reform the age. It is this which makes me despair of "better days, when I see the good taken from us, and "merely dregs left behind. It is too severe a misfortune to "have lost in the space of one year two such men as Mr. "Comte de Laval and Mr. Sidney, alike in their persons, "equally beloved by their friends, and respected by the "world. From henceforth I feel inclined either to entertain "no regard for any one, or to abhor myself: yet I con-"stantly finish with a resolution to cherish a love for my "friends, and to give them proof of my esteem in every "thing which concerns them.

"To yourself in particular I am desirous of giving in-"creased proof of my affection, my esteem, and my devo-"tion. Do me therefore the honour of permitting me "to rise in your good opinion, and let us sum up all "in one word, 'The will of God be done,' whom I "pray," &c. (6)

NOTHING could be more grateful to the house of Sidney in later times, than the commemoration of his splendid vir-

tues.

(6) Memoires de Messire Phillipes de Mornay, &c. p. 739.

Digitized by Google

tues. One of our tragic poets in a dedication to Philip, the seventh Earl of Pembroke, and the great nephew of Sir Philip, having intimated that his illustrious forefathers and indeed all his eminent relations have always been of the first-rate nobility, patrons of wit and arms, magnificently brave, true old-stampt Britons, and ever foremost in the race of glory, "challenges all the men of fame to show an equal to the "immortal SIDNEY, even when so many contemporary "worthies flourished. I mean Sir Philip, the name still of "your Lordship, true rival of your honour, one that could "match your spirit, so most extravagantly great, that he "refused to be a King. He was at once a Cæsar and a "Virgil, the leading soldier, and the foremost poet. All "after this must fail. I have paid just veneration to his "name, and methinks the spirit of Shakespeare pushed the "commendation."

THE noble and justly admired author of the history of the life and reign of Henry II. of England, is inclined to think that the Chevalier Bayard (7), and Sir Philip

Sidney

(7) The Chevalier Bayard, whose prowess in combat and formal gallantry bear a nearer resemblance, than any thing recorded in history, to the character ascribed to the

Digitized by Google

Sidney may properly be compared together, as contending for the prize of fame in the school of chivalry. In this combat, though the victory should be adjudged to Bayard, the friend and companion in arms of three successive Kings of France,—Charles VIII., Louis XII., and Francis I.,—in other respects the English knight has a much better claim to pre-eminence. He was not merely a knight "without fear and without reproach:" he had other, and better, and more valuable qualities; he was a most consummate statesman, one of the most accomplished scholars of the age in which he lived, and equally admired for his wit and the elegance of his taste; while the French

——— cavalier,

the heroes of chivalry, possessed all the talents, which formed a great general. Being dangerously wounded in the field of battle, he ordered one of his attendants to place him under a tree with his face towards the enemy: then fixing his eye on the guard of his sword, which he held up instead of a cross, he addressed his prayers to God, and in this posture, which became his character, both as a Soldier and a Christian, he calmly waited the approach of death. He died in 1524.

Robertson's History of Charles V. b. ii.

That the French nobility were not at that time addicted to letters, is an observation of Castiglione. "Oltre alla bontà il vero et principal' ornamento, penso io, che siano "le lettre: benche i Francesci solamente conoscano la nobilità dell arme, et tutto il "resto nulla estimino: di modo, che non solamente non apprezzano le lettere, mà le "abhorriscono e tutti i letterati tengono per vilissimi huomini, et pare lor dir gran vil-"lania a chi si sia, quando la chiamano clero." *Il Corteggiano, Libro i.*

Digitized by Google

cavalier, like the nobility of his country, was rude, and ignorant of letters, arts, and sciences.

THE same noble historian hath observed, that a parallel may be drawn between Lord Herbert of Cherbury, and Sir Philip Sidney—that they were both of them possessed of the high spirit of chivalry, and were men of parts and learning—but that Lord Herbert had defects and weaknesses in his character arising chiefly from vanity, which are not to be found in Sidney; none of whose actions were improper, much less were they ridiculous. "Yet," he adds, "it must "be owned that if these gentlemen are compared as writers, "the History of King Henry VIII. is superior on the whole "to any work of Sir Philip Sidney."—But surely it cannot escape our observation, that one of them died at the age of sixty-seven years, while the life of the other did not measure half that time. If the days of the latter had been extended to a longer period, there is little doubt but that he would have been one of our most correct and approved writers (8). Sir Richard Baker, having enumerated many of

(8) "Magna quidem pueri fuit expectatio, major
"Inventus juvenis: prævertit tempora cursu.
"Herba habuit florem, flos fructum, serior ætas
"Quid non vidisset, nisi fata inopina negassent
"Tam clarum numen terris, cœloque locassent?"

Exequiæ D. Phil. Sidnæi.

Digitized by Google

of the learned men, who flourished in the reign of Elizabeth, particularly distinguishes "the admirable Sir Philip "Sidney, who, by writing in a light argument, showed how "excellently and beyond all comparision he could have "done in a grave."

EDWARD the black Prince has been classed along with the Chevalier Bayard and Sir Philip Sidney, among the fairest ornaments of chivalry. The exalted virtues of this extraordinary personage entitle him to a far greater portion of glory, than the brightest annals of chivalry can bestow. The Alexanders, the Ptolemies, the Pompeys, the Cæsars of ancient times appear with diminished lustre, when brought into competition with our English prince: nor can modern history present to us a portrait sufficiently resembling him. In public and private life he was the exemplar of every thing good and great. His heart was set on high designs and high actions. The power of language is unable to equal his merits. They are indeed beyond comparison. His character must be contemplated with awe; nay, almost with veneration.

BEN JONSON and Mr. POPE have characterized several of our English authors. The former having remarked that

Digitized by Google

Cicero is said to be the only wit that the people of Rome had equalled to their empire, proceeds to observe, that "we "have had many and in their several ages. Sir Thomas "More (9), the elder Wiatt, Henry Earl of Surrey, "Chaloner (1), Smith (2), Eliot (3), B. Gardiner (4), were for "their times admirable, and the more, because they began "eloquence with us. Sir Nicholas Bacon was singular, and "almost alone in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's time. "*Sir Philip Sidney, and Mr. Hooker, in different matters, grew* "*masters of wit and language, and in whom all vigor of invention,* "*and strength of judgment met.* The Earl of Essex noble and "high, and Sir Walter Raleigh not to be contemned. Sir

Henry

(9) An intimate friendship subsisted between Sir Thomas More, and Sir Thomas Wyatt. The history and character of the former are too well known to require any illustration. Besides his Latin epigrams, he is the author of several English verses, and in his "Rufull Lamentation" on the death of Elizabeth consort of Henry VII, he discovers some marks of poetic excellence. The latter, the father of the unfortunate Sir Thomas Wyatt, who was beheaded in the reign of Queen Mary for an insurrection in Kent, is styled by Anthony Wood, "the delight of the muses and of "mankind." He wrote many sonnets and other poems, with translations of several psalms into English metre. Leland compares him to Dante and Petrarch. He died in 1541. See "Ritson's Bibl. Poet." p. 398.

(1) It is conjectured that the author here meant was Sir Thomas Chaloner, who in the reign of Elizabeth was sent extraordinary ambassador to Philip King of Spain, and

Digitized by Google

" Henry Savile grave and truly lettered, Sir Edward Sandys " excellent in both. Lord Egerton, the Chancellor, a grave " and great orator, and best when he was provoked. But " his learned and able, though unfortunate successor, is he " who hath filled up all numbers, and performed that in " our tongue, which may be compared or preferred to in- " solent Greece or haughty Rome."

THE same writer, when at another time he recommends a mode of instruction to those who teach young scholars, tells them, " as it is fit to read the best authors to youth first, " so let them be of the openest and clearest. As Livy be- " fore Salust, *Sidney before Donne;* and beware of letting

——— " them

and at his leisure hours composed his book of Commonwealth in elegant and learned verse, whilst, as he saith in the preface to it, he lived in winter in a stove, and in summer in a barn. *Sidney papers, Vol. ii. p. 307.*

(2) Probably Sir Thomas Smith, who turned some of the psalms into metre, and wrote certain curious songs, &c. when a prisoner in the tower, in 1549.

(3) Sir Thomas Elyot, who in his " boke named the Governor, 1580," 12mo, has some poetical translations. See " Ellis's Specimens of the early English Poets," Vol. ii. p. 43.

(4) Of this author I can discern no vestige.

Digitized by Google

" them taste Gower or Chaucer first, lest falling too much " in love with antiquity, and not apprehending the weight, " they grow rough and barren in language only."

Mr. Pope, as we learn from one of his biographers, had once formed the design of composing a discourse on English poetry, as it came from provinçal poets. He had proceeded so far in this design, as to class the English poets according to their several schools and successions.

Æra I. 1. School of Provence. 2. School of Chaucer. 3. School of Petrarch. 4. School of Dante.

Æra II. 5. School of Spencer, and from Italian sonnets. 6. School of Donne.

In the School of Petrarch we find the Earl of Surrey, Sir Thomas Wyat, Sir Philip Sidney, and G. Gascoign, the translator of Ariosto's comedies; and Sir Walter Raleigh, in an epigram written on Sidney, calls him *our English Petrarch.*

A very scarce tract entitled, " The art of English poesy, " contrived into three books: the first, of poets and poesy; " the second, of proportion; the third, of ornament, was

Digitized by Google

" printed in London 1589," 4to. The book, though dedicated to Lord Burlegh, is addressed to the Queen. Puttenham, to whom it is ascribed, speaking of the most considerable writers of English poetry, says; " In her Majesty's time " sprung up another company of courtly poets, who have " writ excellently well, if their doings could be found out " and made publick with the rest: of which number is " Edward Earl of Oxford, Thomas Lord Buckhurst when " young, Henry Lord Paget, *Sir Philip Sidney*, Sir Walter " Raleigh," and others whom he names. Then proceeding to give his judgment of them, he praises the Earl of Oxford as famous for comedy, Buckhurst for tragedy, *Sir Philip Sidney and the other gentleman who wrote the Shepherd's Calendar for eclogue and pastoral;* and for ditty and amorous ode, he finds Sir Walter Raleigh's vein most lofty, insolent, and passionate (5).

Sir Henry Wotton was wont to say of Sir Philip Sidney's wit, that " it was the very essence of congruity" (6): and of the estimation, in which he was held as a most accomplished gentleman, we have a remarkable proof in the following

passage:

(5) See Oldys's Life of Sir Walter Raleigh, p. cxxx.

(6) Izaak Walton's Lives, 4to. p. 159.

Digitized by Google

passage: "About twenty-five years since, there was great "kindness, and had long continued, between Archbishop "Sands, and Sir Robert Stapleton, a knight of Yorkshire, "who in those days, for 'a man well spoken of, properly "'seen in languages, a comely and goodly personage, had "'scant an equal, and, except *Sir Philip Sidney*, no superior "'in England; for which reason the Archbishop of all his "'neighbours and countrymen did make a special account "'of him (7).'"

His own extensive erudition, his love of learning, and patronage of learned men, both abroad and at home, have rendered his name dear to latest posterity.

"Wouldst thou to raise thine and thy country's fame
"Choose some old English hero for thy theme,
"Bold Arthur, or great Edward's greater son,
"Or our fifth Harry matchless in renown,
"Make Agincourt and Cressy fields outvie
"The fam'd Lavinian shore or walls of Troy,
"What SCIPIO, what MECÆNAS wouldst thou find,
"What SIDNEY now to thy great project kind?"

Oldham's Satire, dissuading from Poetry.

And

(7) Harrington's Nugæ Antiquæ. Vol. I. p. 203.

Digitized by Google

And to the same purpose are these lines in one of our English pastorals:

" Full fain, O blest Eliza! would I praise
" Thy maiden rule, and Albion's golden days,
" Then gentle SIDNEY liv'd, *the shepherd's friend*:
" Eternal blessings on his shade attend!" (8)

LEARNED foreigners were ambitious to recommend their writings to the favour of Sir Philip Sidney. It would be scarcely possible to enumerate all those eminent persons, who composed this bright assemblage of scholars. The names of those few, who are here selected, are known to every lover of science. And it redounds not a little to the honour of this country, that a private English gentleman, whose life did not much exceed the period of thirty years, should be celebrated throughout all Europe, as the general patron of letters.

LAM-

(8) He is celebrated among the true lovers of their country:

" See the firm leaders of the patriot line!
" See Sidney, Raleigh, Hampden, Somers shine!
" See Hough, superior to a tyrant's doom,
" Smile at the menace of the slave of Rome!" *Mason's Isis.*

" Lo! then the leaders of thy patriot line
" Hampden, and Hooker, Hyde, and Sidney shine."

Warton's Triumphs of Isis.

Digitized by Google

LAMBERTUS DANÆUS was born and educated in the communion of the church of Rome (9). Having seen at Paris the famous Anne du Bourg, counsellor of Parliament, under whom he had studied the civil law, burnt for heresy, he was so affected with his constancy and magnanimity, that, as he had admired him through his whole life for his knowledge and virtue, he believed that so great and good a man would not have embraced the Protestant religion without the clearest conviction of its truth. Hence he was induced to examine that religion, and he made a public confession of it at Geneva; and relinquishing the study of jurisprudence, he applied himself to theology, and became one of the most excellent of the Protestant divines.—In 1579 he dedicated to Mr. Philip Sidney his "Poetica Geographia (1)." Among many other theological works

of

(9) See the life of Lambertus Danæus in "Fuller's Abel Redivivus," p. 408.—It was said of him, "Mirum est homuncionis unius ingenium tot et tam divinas scientias haurire et retinere potuisse."

(1) "GEOGRAPHIA POETICA

"Id est,

"Universæ terræ descriptionis ex optimis ac vetustissimis quibusque

"Latinis poetis libri quatuor,

"Quorum

"Primus Europam: secundus Africam:

"Tertius Asiam: quartus mare universum et maris insulas continet:

"In

of distinguished merit, he was the author of a commentary on one of St. Paul's epistles. He was discouraged by Languet from inscribing to the same patron this last performance, because in his explication of some passages in that epistle, he differed from the English expositors.

SCIPIO GENTILIS, an Italian, and the brother of Albericus Gentilis, the professor of civil law at Oxford, is celebrated for the elegance of his Latin poetry. He was happy in obtaining the esteem of Sir Philip Sidney, to whom he has

addressed

" In singulis autem libris hic ordo diligenter est observatus, ut cujusque orbis
" partes, regiones, populi populorumque mores, urbes, flumina, et montes illustriores
" ex iisdem poetis in certa capita distribuantur, atque describantur.

" LAMBERTI DANÆI Opus."

This work consists of extracts from the Latin poets, descriptive of the differents parts of the earth which were known to the ancients, selected from Ovid, Valerius Flaccus, Lucan, Horace, Statius, Tibullus, &c. The title of the book is quoted at large, from the persuasion that it might with great propriety be introduced into our schools. No work seems to be better adapted to the purpose of supplying a complete system of ancient geography. It is composed with much taste and judgment; and is far from being a mere cento.

The theological writings of Lambertus Danæus are well known to the English Divines, and several of his learned tracts have been translated into the English language.

Digitized by Google

addressed several of his poems, and among others his paraphrase of different psalms, and his "Assembly of Pluto," translated from the beginning of Tasso's Jerusalem (2); in the dedication of which he declares that his writings were promised and are now delivered to him, who is not only a lover of poets, but the best of poets himself. "Others," he says, "admire in you, Philip Sidney, the splendour of "your birth—your genius in your childhood, capable of "all philosophy—your honourable embassy undertaken "in your youth, and the experience obtained from visiting "the cities and viewing the manners of so many countries— "the exhibition of your personal valour and prowess in the "public spectacles and equestrian exercises, in your man- "hood:—let others admire all these qualities. I not only "admire, but I love and venerate you, because you re- "gard poetry so much as to excel in it: nor will I omit "any opportunity of acknowledging my obligations to "you, as far as it is in my power."

A native of England experiences great difficulty in acquiring that mode of pronouncing the Latin language,

——— which

(2) "Scipii Gentilis in 25 Davidis psalmos epicæ paraphrases, 1584."
"Plutonis concilium ex initio quarti libri Solymeidos. Londini, 1584."

Digitized by Google

which was then in use on the continent. This was peculiarly the case with Sir Philp Sidney. His earliest efforts to surmount this difficulty did not succeed. He thought it perhaps of too little moment to demand that attention, which was strenuously and repeatedly recommended to him by Languet. Yet he probably changed his sentiments on this subject, as he actually proposed the discussion of it to Justus Lipsius, a man of vast erudition, but of no taste. Hence originated the tractate which is inserted in the appendix to the first volume of the works of that learned person, under the title "*De rectâ pronuntiatione Latinæ linguæ.*" He inscribed it to our illustrious countryman, a few months previous to his death, addressing him as the bright star of Britain, on whom light is copiously diffused by virtue, by the Muses, by the Graces, by Fortune. When Lipsius wrote this treatise, he resided in the university of Leyden, and lived in the outward profession of the reformed religion, having publicly abjured Popery. Afterward he returned to the church of Rome, and became a bold, though a weak, advocate of her doctrines.

On the revival of literature, when science, driven from Constantinople, took refuge in the courts of Europe, the typographic art was cultivated with the most laudable

Digitized by Google

and unremitting assiduity. Robert Stephens and Henry Stephens his son, arrived at an uncommon proficiency in it (3). From their press issued elegant and correct editions of the most valuable writings of antiquity. Indeed nothing can surpass the neatness and beauty of their Hebrew, Greek, and Roman characters. The Latin Thesaurus of the father, and the Greek Thesaurus of the son, volumes more to be valued than the treasures of kings, have eternized their names.

HENRY STEPHENS edited the new Testament in Greek, printed at his own press in 1576. He remarks, that, about three years before, he had presented to Mr. Philip Sidney in person, a small volume of a Greek manuscript written with his own hand, containing moral maxims and directions for the conduct of life: "That work," says he, "comprised the lessons of worldly prudence: this which "I now offer to your acceptance, comprehends the lessons "of

(3) When the University of Cambridge visited Queen Elizabeth, at Audley End, no present could be more grateful to her, than that which she received from them:—a new testament in Greek of Robert Stephens, his first printing, in folio, "bound in "redde velvet, and limped with gold, the armes of England sett upon each side of "the book." *Nichol's Progresses, &c.*

Digitized by Google

" of heavenly wisdom. The one regarded only the con-
" dition of man in his present frail scene of existence; the
" other opens a prospect to immortality and bliss in a
" future state. I had then the pleasure of conversing with
" you. Now you are in a remote country: between us

" ——— obstacles are numerous interpos'd,
" Vale-dark'ning mountains, and the dashing sea."

He first saw him at Heidelburg, again at Strasburg, and a long time after at Vienna. In all these places his affection for him continually increased. The more he knew him, and the oftener he conversed with him, the more ardently and cordially did he esteem and love him. " This," he remarks, " was not extraordinary. Your ac-
" complishments seemed to improve every day. May they
" continue to do so, until you attain such a degree of worth,
" as to augment the glory of your native country!" (4)

He

(4) " Nec mirum sane meum illum in te amorem ita crevisse, quum tuæ, quæ eum
" excitaverunt, ingenii dotes non parum crevisse viderentur. Atque utinam crescere
" non desinant, donec talis tantusque evaseris, ut tuæ etiam Angliæ celebritas
" incrementum a te accipiat."

Digitized by Google

He has observed in this edition that division of each chapter into verses, which had been begun and completed by his father with no very great degree of attention, or rather in a most careless and desultory manner, as he was travelling on horse-back from Paris to Lyons (5).

The text is printed with accuracy and neatness; and the several references on the margin, with the Latin interpretation of obscure words and phrases, greatly enhance its value. The preface, containing a dissertation on the style of the sacred writings, is composed with singular modesty, and discovers no small share of classic erudition and critical discernment (6). It is remarkable that the types used in the impression of this book exhibit an exact resemblance of the Greek hand-writing of the editor (7).

In

(5) "Lutetiâ Lugdunum petens hanc, de quâ agitur, capitis cujusque catacopen "confecit, et quidem magnam ejus inter equitandum partem."

Henricus Stephanus de patre suo.

(6) This truly excellent dissertation of Henry Stephens, is inserted by Walæus in his variorum edition of the New Testament, printed at Lyons, in two volumes, 4to.

(7) Henry Stephens was persecuted with relentless rage by the enemies of the reformed religion, on account of his famous apology for Herodotus. The end of this learned

Digitized by Google

In 1581 Henry Stephens printed the eight books of Herodian, with the elegant Latin version of Angelus Politianus. To them were added two books of the Historian Zozimus, the Greek text of which was then printed for the first time. This volume he inscribed to Mr. Sidney, his address to him beginning with these lines:

"Quid Sidneus agit? monitus multumque monendus
"Ut partas tueatur opes, et perdere vitet
"Dona palatino puero quæ infudit Apollo."

He seems to have entertained the same fears which formerly alarmed Languet, lest the amusements and avocations of the English court should alienate him from study, and withdraw him from those literary pursuits, which once engaged his whole time.

But

learned and ingenious man was truly deplorable. After many disappointments and most vexatious oppressions, he was reduced to great poverty, and died in an hospital at Paris.

Of the celebrated printers who bore the name of Stephens, there were eleven, besides two females, the sisters of Paul Stephens, who also excelled in the typographic art:

"Henrici tres, Roberti totidem, Francisi duo, Carolus, Paulus, et Antonius; Paulique "sorores Florentia et Dionysia. *Fabricii Bibliotheca Latina, Vol. iii,*

Digitized by Google

But among the foreigners of highly exalted fame in the republic of letters, who were struck with admiration of the merit of Sir Philip Sidney, none surpassed Theophilus Banco, otherwise called Theophilus Banosius, a person most eminent for his knowledge of theology. He gave proofs of his diligence and fidelity in editing some of the works of Peter Ramus; and prefixed the life of that great man to his four books of Commentaries on the Christian Religion, printed at Frankfort in 1577. At the conclusion of this biographical work, the author solicits the attention of our learned countryman, with all the warmth of the most sincere respect: "To you alone, most famous Sidney, "I present this account of Peter Ramus, faithfully re- "corded by me, along with these his Commentaries. I am "impelled to this by the strongest motives. As children, "born after the death of their parents, are committed to "the care of friends most faithfully attached to their in- "terest, so this posthumous work of Ramus is consigned "to your protection; as you not only entertained the "tenderest love for the writer, when alive, but now, that "he is dead, esteem and reverence him. Add to this the "recommendation of Hubert Languet, a man of the greatest "celebrity in this our age, who first placed before me a "true portrait of Philip Sidney: without flattery I pro-

Digitized by Google

"nounce you to be a perfect image and resemblance of "nobility. For, not to mention your descent from the "family of the Earls of Warwick, eminently illustrious "throughout all England, your virtue, outshining the "splendour of an high lineage, seems to me a theme of "just encomium. I remember well, when I first saw you, "when I first contemplated with wonder your uncommon "endowments of mind and body; I remember well, I say, "the words of Gregory, who declared the Angli or "English, that were at Rome, to be really Angels." (8)

To the enterprising genius of Ramus, bursting through the gloom in which all the schools of Europe had been long involved, we owe the introduction of a rational philosophy, which improved the human intellect, and considerably enlarged the limits of human science. The comprehensive understanding of Sidney could not repose in the

dark

(8) The compliment paid to Milton, when he was at Rome, is well known. A similar eulogy was composed by Janus Dousa, on Elizabeth Jane Weston, a most beautiful and accomplished English lady, who resided at Prague during the greater part of her life:

"Angla vel Angelica es, vel prorsus es Angelus: immo
"Si sexus vetat hoc, Angelus est Animus."

Digitized by Google

dark perplexities of the Aristotelian system (9). Hence no friendship could to him be more agreeable or more instructive, than that of the biographer of this enlightened reformer of learning, who had the resolution to maintain in a public disputation at Paris, that all the propositions of Aristotle were false. Smit with the love of truth, Banosius caught the spirit, and, from a full conviction of their propriety, imbibed the opinions of Ramus. He resided at Frankfort, and was appointed by the Belgic churches one of the members of the Synod, which was held at Dort in 1577. He is commended by Languet for his goodness, his learning, and sincere attachment to Sidney (1). Besides other treatises on theological subjects, he wrote a censure of the severe proceedings of the Pope against Henry of Bourbon, King of Navarre, and afterward King of France. Sixtus the fifth, the most ambitious of all the Roman pontiffs, had issued out his bull of excommunication, with the usual maledictions of papal resentment, against that prince, proclaiming him not only guilty of heresy, but denominating him the protector of heretics,

pro-

(9) It was a common remark—" Aristotelis decreta nos magis commovent quam " Christi."

(1) " Est vir bonus et doctus, et tui observantissimus." *Languети Epist.*

Digitized by Google

pronouncing him incapable of succeeding to the crown of France, and further absolving all his subjects from their oath of allegiance. The remarks of Banosius, the friend of Sir Philip Sidney, and the admirer of his virtues, on this severe and cruel edict, could not be ungrateful to the English Protestant, whose beloved Sovereign had experienced a similar treatment from Pius the fifth (2).

Nor were our own countrymen, who aspired to fame in different departments of literature, less emulous to engage the favour, and to deserve the patronage of Sir Philip Sidney.

Every reader, conversant in the annals of our naval transactions, will cheerfully acknowledge the merit of Richard Hakluyt, who devoted his studies to the investigation of those periods of the English history, which regard the improvement of navigation and commerce. He had the advantages of an academical education. He was elected student of Christ-church in Oxford in 1570, and was there-

(2) Heidegger in his elaborate treatise on the apocalyptic Babylon, refers his readers to the writings of Banosius, and particularly to his learned dissertation on the Roman hierarchy.

Digitized by Google

therefore contemporary with Sidney at the University. To him we are principally indebted for a clear and comprehensive description of those noble discoveries of the English nation made by sea or over land to the most distant quarter of the earth. His incomparable industry was remunerated with every possible encouragement by Sir Francis Walsingham and Sir Philip Sidney. To the latter, as to a most generous promoter of all ingenious and useful knowledge, he inscribed his first collection of voyages and discoveries, printed in 1582. Thus animated and encouraged, he was enabled to leave to posterity the fruits of his unwearied labours—an invaluable treasure of nautical information preserved in volumes, which even at this day, affix to his name a brilliancy of reputation, which a series of ages can never efface or obscure.

Few characters are superior to that of Sir Walter Raleigh, styled by Bishop Burnet, "one of the greatest men of the "age in which he lived." The early friendship of Sidney recommended him to the notice of the Earl of Leicester, whose patronage, assisted by his own wonderful talents and high attainments, gradually advanced him to that pre-eminence of distinction, which hath secured to him the admiration and applause of posterity; whilst the tragical

Digitized by Google

event of his death, will equally excite their commisseration and regret (3).

Sir PHILIP SIDNEY, nurtured in the school of science, cherished the divine art of poetry with the kindest and most beneficent indulgence. It is related of him, that upon reading the first stanza of the description of Despair in the ninth canto of he first book of "the Faery Queen," he was seized with such an unusual transport of joy, that he commanded his steward to reward the author with fifty pounds —that on the perusal of the second stanza, he ordered the sum to be doubled—and that, proceeding to the third, he increased the gratuity to two hundred pounds, directing the payment to be made without delay, lest in his progress through the poem he should be induced to give away all

his

(3) Sidney and Raleigh were contemporaries at Oxford. The latter was a Commoner of Oriel College, about the year 1568, and resided three years in the University. It is not generally known, that soon after the demise of Queen Elizabeth, Raleigh declared his opinion, at a consultation held at Whitehall, among several considerable personages, that it was the wisest way for them to keep the staff in their own hands, and set up a commonwealth, and not be subject to a needy and beggarly nation. This declaration of Raleigh was conveyed by one of the cabal to King James, who never forgave Raleigh for uttering it.

See Warton's "Pope's Works," Vol. iv. p. 233.

Digitized by Google

his property. This story, though frequently repeated, could not with propriety be passed over in silence in this volume, though it is attended with so many very doubtful circumstances, that it is extremely difficult to allow any degree of credit to it. Spenser was already known to him in a much earlier period of his life, when the young poet spent several weeks at Penshurst, where he probably composed some of the pastorals in the Shepherd's Calender. In this place of rural elegance they tuned their lyres together (4). To the advice of Sidney it is generally attributed, that he transferred his talents from pastoral to heroic poetry. The merit of cherishing the Faery Queen, while it was yet in its infancy, is assigned to him. That poem would probably never have existed, if the author of it had not been patronised by Sidney. Indeed Spenser himself, who was not encouraged by the government, under which he lived,

seems

(4) "Oh! could I emulate Dan Sidney's muse!
"Thy Sidney, Cantium. He from court retired
"In Penshurst's sweet Elysium sung delight,
"Sung transport to the soft-responding streams
"Of Medway, and enliven'd all her groves,
"While ever near him, goddess of the green,
"Fair Pembroke sate, and smil'd immense applause. *Smart.*

Digitized by Google

seems to acknowledge this, in a beautiful sonnet addressed to the Countess of Pembroke.

" Remembrance of that most heroick spirit
" The heavens' pride, the glory of our days,
" Which now triumpheth through immortal merit
" Of his brave virtues, crown'd with lasting bays
" Of heavenly bliss and everlasting praise;
" Who first my muse did lift out of the flore
" To sing his sweet delights in lowly lays,
" Bids me, most noble Lady, to adore
" In the divine resemblance of your face
" Which with your virtues ye embellish more,
" And native beauty deck with heavenly grace,
" For his and for your own especial sake
" Vouchsafe from him this token in good worth to take."

Dr. Birch, no inattentive or careless examiner of facts, is inclined to think that the dedication of " the Shepherd's " Calendar," printed at London, in 4to, 1579, first introduced the poet to this his kind patron, through whose influence he was promoted to a very lucrative employment, and whose death was the occasion of real grief to him. After a life chequered with a variety of prosperous and adverse events, or rather almost wholly consisting of disappointment and distress, Spenser died, not indeed in ex-

Digitized by Google

treme poverty and indigence, but by no means in a state of affluence and wealth (5).

AMONG

(5) Camden says of Spenser, that, "by a fate which still follows poets, he always wrestled with poverty;" and again, "he returned into England a poor man, "where he shortly died."

Phinehas Fletcher has thus commemorated the melancholy fate of Spenser:

"Witness our Colin, whom though all the Graces
"And all the Muses loved; whose well-taught song
"Parnassus self and Glorian embraces,
"And all the learned and all the shepherd throng:
"Yet all his hopes were crossed, all suits denyed,
"Discouraged, scorned, his writings vilifyed,

"Poorly, poor man he lived; poorly, poor man he dyed,
"And had not that great hart * (whose honoured head
"Ah! lies full low) pitied thy woeful plight,
"There hadst thou lain unwept, unburied,
"Unblest, nor graced with any common rite:
"Yet thou shalt live, when thy great foe shall sink,
"Beneath his mountain tomb, whose fame shall stink,
"And time his blacker name shall blurr with blackest ink." *Purple Island.*

* The Earl of Essex whose cognisance was a deer.

Mr. Drummond, of Hawthornden, was informed by Ben Jonson, that "Spenser's "goods were robbed by the Irish, and his house and little child burnt, that he and "his wife escaped, and after died for want of bread, in King-street, London."—See also "Hume's History of England," Ch. xliv. and "Birch's Memoirs of the Reign "of Queen Elizabeth," Vol. ii. p. 487.

Digitized by Google

AMONG other modes of promoting science in the reign of Elizabeth, a college or company of antiquarians was instituted in London, at the Herald's Office, with a view to explain the antiquites of England. A list of these gentlemen is preserved. Sir Philip Sidney's taste for general literature, as well as his early attachment to that particular branch of knowledge, which contributed to elucidate the history of his own country, induced him to become a member of this honourable society. Here he had frequent opportunities of enjoying the most exquisite of human delights, the conversation of virtuous and learned men. This institution did not exist long. Its dissolution was much lamented: but from its ashes arose another society of antiquarians, which, after various vicissitudes of fortune, flourishes at this day with a celebrity and lustre to which it is deservedly entitled.

THE sixteenth century may properly be deemed the age of learning. It was the reign of criticism, while in every part of Europe prodigies of erudition appeared. The best and most correct impressions of the Greek and Roman writers were printed by Plantin, Turnebus, Frobenius, by the Wechels and the Stephens's, and other ingenious professors of typography. A taste for letters to an intelligent

Digitized by Google

mind will be always the source of consolation and delight. Hence a more than usual attachment to literature, rendered Sir Philip Sidney anxious to furnish his library with the scarcest and choicest volumes on all subjects. These were purchased for him by his agents at the annual fairs, which were held at Frankfort, at Leipsic, and other places on the continent. By his last will he bequeathed one half of his books to Sir Fulke Greville, and the other to Mr. Edward Dyer (6).

THE

(6) In Davison's poems or "A Poetical Rapsodie, 1611." 12mo. are "two pastorals "made by Sir Philip Sidney, upon his meeting with his two worthy friends and "fellow poets, Sir Edward Dier and M. Fulke Grevill."

In one of these pastoral poems Sidney's joy at meeting his two friends is thus expressed:

"Welcome my two to me. E. D. F. G. P. S.
"The number best beloved
"Within my heart you be
"In friendship unremoved.
"Joyne hearts and hands, so let it be,
"Make but one mind in bodies three.

"Give leave your flockes to range,
"Let us the while be playing
"Within the elmy grange
"Your flockes will not be straying.
"Joyne hands &c.

"Cause

Digitized by Google

THE former born in the same year, and educated at the same school with him, was his relation, his friend, his biographer. From an illustrious ancestry he derived every "hereditary advantage of mind as well as body."—He spent the early part of his life in the court of Elizabeth, who promoted him to many civil employments, though

---

she

"Cause all the mirth you can,
"Since I am now come hether,
"Who never joy but when
"I am with you together,
"Joyne hands &c.

"Like lovers doe their love
"So joy I, in you seeing:
"Let nothing me remove
"From alwaies with you being:
"Joyne hands &c.

"And as the turtle dove
"To mate with whom he liveth,
"Such comfort fervent love
"Of you to my heart giveth.
"Joyne hands &c.

"Now joined be our hands,
"Let them be nére asunder,
"But linkt in binding bands
"By metamorphoz'd wonder.
"So should our severed bodies three
"As one for ever joined be.

pp. 151. 152.

Digitized by Google

she uniformly opposed his desire of acquiring military fame, and withheld him from fulfilling his engagements to serve as a soldier in the wars of the Netherlands. He is described by Camden, as "a person no less esteemed for the "sweetness of his temper, than the dignity of his station." Upon the news of the death of his royal Mistress, "he being "at Warwick, at the great assize, came down from the "bench, and, with some of his friends, proclaimed King "James, which the judges of the circuit refused to do."—In the eighteenth year of the reign of James, he was created a Baron of the realm by the title of Lord Brooke, Baron Brooke of Beauchamps Court, in the county of Warwick. In his life time he erected in a fair room, which was once the chapter-house for the Dean and Canons of the collegiate church of St. Mary's in Warwick, a very stately monument whereon was engraven this inscription: "FULKE GRE-"VILLE servant to QUEEN ELIZABETH, counsellor to "KING JAMES, and friend to Sir PHILIP SIDNEY (7).

—— "Tropheum

(7) Their friendship is thus noted by Giordano Bruno, in an address to Sir Philip Sidney, prefixed to one of his works—"Al generosissimo spirito del Signor Folco "Grevello, il quale, come con lacci di stretta et lungha amicitia, con cui siete allevati, "nodriti, et crescati insieme, vi sta congiunto."

As

Digitized by Google

"Tropheum peccati." But, not content with thus entitling himself, he frequently expressed a desire of being known to future ages, as the master of SHAKESPERE, and BEN JONSON, and the patron of Lord Chancellor EGERTON, and Bishop OVERALL. His life, prolonged to a much more advanced period, than that of his beloved friend, whom he survived above forty years, was taken away by the knife of a domestic, whose resentment on finding himself, as he thought, neglected and unrewarded for his past services, urged him to the cruel deed, which was immediately avenged by the hand of suicide.

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY and Sir Fulke Greville were inseparable companions. When they attended the court of Elizabeth, no jealousy or envy subsisted between them: they were equally emulous to proceed in the career of glory, and to walk in the path of virtue.

IN

As a proof of the great regard which Sir Fulke Greville entertained for his friend, I quote the following passage from a letter written by him in 1586 to Archibald Douglas, "the Lord imbassidor legier of Scotland:"—"I am a stranger to the Master of Greys, "but in honor of his memory, that whyle he lived bare an honourable witness of his "worth, I mean the Prince of gentlemen, Sir Philip Sidney, I hope it shall be no tres- "pass to present him love and honour by you."

Lodge's Illustrations, &c. Vol. ii. p. 337.

Digitized by Google

In the recesses of private life they recommended themselves to each other by the sweet intercourse of familiar converse. Tradition points out the terrace near Sir Fulke's seat in Warwickshire, where these two friends usually took their morning walk, when they spent the time together with all the harmony of sentiment resulting from a similarity of "lineaments, of manners, and of spirit."

Mr. Dyer, whom Lord Bacon calls "a grave and wise "gentleman," and whom Puttenham has praised "for "elegie most sweete, solemne, and of high conceit," is classed among the English poets, though his only claim to that distinction seems to be founded on some pastoral odes and madrigals, which are printed in a volume of poems, published under the title of, "a Collection of choice Flowers "and Descriptions." So strict an union of friendship subsisted between him and Sir Philip Sidney, that they were denominated "the Castor and Pollux of Poetry." He was employed in several embassies, and particularly in one to Denmark in 1589. Addicted to chymistry, he was an enthusiastic admirer of those two noted adepts in astrology, Mr. Edward Kelly, and Dr. John Dee. Spenser, speaking of Sidney and Dyer, styles them "the two very diamonds "of her Majesty's court." And Languet, in one of his

Digitized by Google

Letters, compares the possession of Mr. Dyer's friendship to that of "a most precious gem which enriches the Cabinet "in which it is placed (8)."

It was not unusual in the Court of Elizabeth for the subject to make annual presents, and at his death to leave a bequest as memorials of duty and affection to his sovereign. Even bawbles and glittering gewgaws were not unacceptable to the Queen. On the first day of January 1577-8 Mr. Philip Sidney gave her Majesty, at her honour of Hampton Court, "a smock of camerick, the sleves and "collor wrought with blae work and edged with a small "bone lace of gold and silver, and a silver ruffe cut worke, "florished with gold and silver, and set with spangills, "con-

(8) Langueti, Epist. lxxxiii.

The most intimate union of friendship subsisted between Sidney and Dyer. "Spen- "ser in a letter to Gabriel Hervey, Esquire represents them as legislators, jointly issuing "out their mandate for the improvement of English poetry." "As for the two worthy "gentlemen, Mr. Sidney and Mr. Dyer, they have me, I thank them, in some use "and familiarity. And now they have proclaimed in their ἀγορᾳ a general sur- "ceasing and silence of bad rhymers, and also of the very best too, instead whereof "they have by authority of their whole senate prescribed certain rules and laws of "quantities of English syllables for English verse, having had thereof already great "practice, and almost drawn me into their faction."

Digitized by Google

"containing four ounces." In 1580 his gift was "a cup of "crystall covered with a cover." In a roll, illuminated by Petrucci Ubaldini, he is depicted as presenting the Queen at a new year's tide in 1581, with "a jewel of gold, being a "whip garnished with small diamonds in four rows, and "cords of small seed pearle;" and in 1582 he gave "a "jewel of gold like a castle, garnished with small "diamonds on the one side, being a pot to set flowers "in (9)". In his last will he bequeaths to her Majesty one jewel, worth one hundred pounds, which he prays Sir Henry Goonier, his good cousin and friend, to present to her Royal Highness, as a remembrance of his most loyal and bounden duty to her Majesty (1).

VARIOUS emblems with mottos and devices were used by the nobility and gentry at tilts and tournaments. The classic reader will recollect that the sea was considered by

the

(9) The Queen in her turn made presents to her courtiers. In 1577, she gave to Philip Sidney 22 ounces of gilt plate.

See "Nicholls's Progresses of Queen Elizabeth."

(1) The following note or schedule, copied from a manuscript, to which is subjoined the short letter written by Sidney in his own hand-writing, supplies information on the price of an article of dress in the reign of Elizabeth:

Mr.

Digitized by Google

the Romans as emblematical of mutability and uncertainty. Sir Philip Sidney very aptly expressed a mind exempted from

Mr. Phylype Sedney.

Fyrst for ij pare of pantoffulles and ij payre of showes for your sellfe	vis.	viij d.
Item one payre of stronge shewes for yourselfe		xviij.
It. for one payre of buttes for Mr. Weddell	vis.	viij d.
It. for one payre of showes for hym		xij d.
It. for iiij payre of showes for your Servant the futtman	iiij s.	viij d.
It. for iiij payre of showes for Thomas your man	iiij s.	
It. for one payre of whyght Showes and one payre of pantoffuls for yourselfe	iiij s.	iiij d.
It. for one payre of Spanysh lether Showes double solde		xx d.
It. for iij payre of Showes for iij of the men	iij s.	
It. for one payre of pompes for Greffen the man		viij d.
It. for one payre of Spanysh lether Showes for yourselfe		xx d.
It. for a payre of Showes for your futeman		xiiij d.
It. for sollying a payre of Showes for Thomas		viij d.
It. for one payre of buckelde butts at	viij s.	
the payre and one payre of wynter buts ..... for yourselfe	xv s.	
It. viij payre of Spanysh lether Slypeers for yourselfe	xvij s.	iij d.
It. for iiij payre of Showes for Thomas	iiij s.	
It. for vi payre of Showes for Thomas futeman	vij s.	
It. for solynge a payre of Showes for Thomas your man		viij d.

H. Sidney { "I have so longe owed this bearer this expressed sum of money as I am "forced for the safegarde of my credit to request you to lette him have it "presentlie, and this shall be your sufficient discharge to be receaved at "Midsomer quarter. I pray you as you love me performe it. By me "Philip Sidney."

The short letter written by Sir Philip is addressed to his father's steward.

Digitized by Google

from the turbulence of passion; a firm resolution, a steady perseverance in duty, by the impress or delineation of the Caspian sea, which had no ebb or flow, with this motto *Sine refluxu.* Hence that lesson of admonition is derived, "Be thou as the Caspian sea."

——"like to the Pontick sea
"Whose icy current and compulsive force
"Ne'er feels retiring ebb, but keeps due on
"To the Propontick and the Hellespont." *Shakespeare.*

THE motto which he sometimes placed under his arms, *Vix ea nostra voco,* intimated the impropriety of calling those things our own, the possession of which is precarious and uncertain; or rather it denoted a reliance upon himself, and upon his own exertions, and not on the noble birth of his ancestors, in allusion to the words of the poet

"Nam genus et proavos, et quæ non fecimus ipsi,
"Vix ea nostra voco ..... *Ovid* (2)."

ANOTHER

(2) "In PHILIPPI SIDNÆI symbolum, *Vix ea nostra voco.*

"Cum stirpem referas illustrem, dic *Philippe,*
"Et magnos atavos, conspicuamque domum:
"Cum sint nobilium tibi clara insignia avorum,
"Antiquumque genus, vix ea nostra vocas?

"Insignis

ANOTHER motto, which he occasionally adopted, *Aut viam inveniam aut faciam*, indicated that strong impulse of ambition, which stimulated his efforts in the pursuit of fame:

"What shall I do, to be for ever known,
"And make the age to come my own?" *Cowley.*

THAT which he used at the tourney in 1581, *Sic nos non nobis*, very properly designated the generosity and beneficence, with which he uniformly consulted the public good, without any regard to his own interest.

WHEN the Earl of Leicester, to whose fortune he was long heir apparent, had a son born to him; on the tilt-day next following, Sidney assumed an impress with the word *Speravi* dashed through, to show that his hope therein was

——— dashed.

"Insignis quibus ergo studes insignibus esse?
"Unde tuos titulos, stemmataque unde trahis?
"An studium, mores, pietatem, fortia facta,
"Virtutem, et mentis munera, nostra vocas?
"Quæ tu *nostra vocas*, ea sunt divina, Philippe,
"Nec meliora illis di cere *nostra* potes"

Samson Hussus[a].

[a] Peplus Illust. Viri Phil. Sid. &c. p. 36.

Digitized by Google

dashed (3). Nor has he omitted to shew a rich fertility of invention by those devices and mottos, which he has so frequently represented as engraven on the shields of the different knights, whose feats of chivalry he has represented in his Arcadia.

THESE particulars, however nugatory they may be deemed, are not wholly uninteresting, as they in some degree suggest a more intimate knowledge of the prevailing manners of the age. It not seldom happens that minute and apparently unimportant circumstances develope the characters and disclose the dispositions of men, when matters of much greater weight and consequence fail to produce such a discovery.

IN his earlier years he indulged his genius for poetry, by exercising it on subjects of gaiety and mirth. His Anacreontics, interspersed in different parts of the Arcadia,

are

(3) The Earl of Leicester had by his wife Lettice, the widow of Walter Devereux Earl of Essex, one son Robert, Baron of Denbigh, who died in 1584, at Wansted, and is buried under a sumptuous monument in the collegiate church of Warwick. We learn from the funeral eulogy of Mr. Alexander Nevile on Sir Philip Sidney, that verses were written by the members of the University of Cambridge on the death of this infant son of the Earl of Leicester.

Digitized by Google

are little inferior to those of Cowley, and are written with that ease and elegance, which we admire in the festive songs of the Teïan Bard, those songs which Julius Cæsar Scaliger pronounces to be "sweeter than the sweetest "Indian sugar." In a maturer age he diverted his thoughts to more serious topics, raising them from earthly to heavenly objects. The following valedictory sonnet cannot be read with indifference:

"Leave me, O Love, which reaches but to dust,
"And thou, my mind, aspire to higher things!
"Grow rich in that which never taketh rust,
"Whatever fades but fading pleasure brings.
"Draw in thy beams, and humble all thy might
"To that sweet yoke where lasting freedoms be;
"Which breaks the clouds, and opens forth the light
"That doth both shine, and gives us light to see.
"O take fast hold, let that light be thy guide,
"In this small course which birth draws out to death,
"And think how evil becometh him to slide,
"Who seeketh heaven, and comes of heavenly breath.
"Then farewell world, thy uttermost I see,
"Eternal love, maintain thy life in me."

It is recorded of him that, before he set out upon the expedition which proved so fatal to him, "he had com-"pletely put on his armour, but, meeting the Marshall of "the camp lightly armed, he took off his cuisses, or that

Digitized by Google

" part of the armour which covered his thigh, and so " disarmed that part where he received his wound." If this circumstance be excepted, I know no act of his life, which could justly subject him to the censure of his royal mistress, when she said to Sir Charles Blount, afterward Lord Mountjoy, whom she recalled from France, whither he had gone without her knowledge, to serve under one of her generals: " Serve me again so once more, and I will " lay you fast enough for running. *You will never leave, till* " *you are knocked on the head, as that inconsiderate fellow Sidney* " *was* (4):" Hence Lord Orford asserts, that Sir Philip " died with the rashness of a volunteer." How far this assertion is founded in truth, I venture not to determine. A reader not entirely ignorant of the history of the wars of the sixteenth century, will discern a very culpable defect of military institution, which then prevailed among the young nobility and gentry in England. Endowed with personal courage, and relying on their bodily strength, they placed themselves in the ranks as private soldiers, without any other motive of ambition, than that of obtaining glory from their impetuosity, their boldness, their intrepidity. Hence very few of them became great generals, while the Spaniards

were

(4) Winstanley's Worthies, p. 244.

Digitized by Google

were never in want of men, who possessed superior knowledge in the art of war, and were perfectly qualified to assume the command of armies.

AN obloquy has been cast on the memory of Sir Philip Sidney, which requires a more attentive consideration. Dr. Joseph Warton, the late editor of Mr. Pope's works, has remarked in his note on the following line,

"See SIDNEY bleeds amidst the martial strife."

Essay on Man, Ep. iv. 103.

that "among many things related of the life and character "of this all-accomplished person, it does not seem to be "much known, that he was the intimate friend and patron "of *the famous Atheist* Giordano Bruno, who was in a secret "club with him and Sir Fulke Greville, held in London in "1587 (5) and that the "Spaccio della bestia triumfante (6)

"was

(5) This date must be erroneous, as Sir Philip died in the preceding year. Giordano Bruno came to London in 1583 or in 1584, where he resided about two years in the house of Monsieur Castelnau, ambassador from the French King Henry the third. He was well known to the Queen, and much beloved by her courtiers. Sir Philip Sidney, and Sir Fulke Greville were his most intimate friends. With them and some others he had frequent assemblies. Philosophical and metaphysical subjects, of a nice and delicate

Digitized by Google

" was at that time composed and printed in London and " dedicated to Sir Philip."

Is it possible to suspect that a mind imbued with the purest and soundest principles of morality and religion, and enriched with all the attainments of useful and elegant science, should envelope itself in the dreary gloom of

—— atheism;

delicate nature were there discussed, and the doors of the apartments in which they met were kept shut. According to Mr. Toland, the book in question was not printed at Paris, as the title-page announces, but at London in 1584. To it is prefixed not a dedication, but rather an—" epistola explicatoria al molto illustre et excellente caval- " liere Philippo Sidneio." Mr. Toland informs us that only twenty copies were printed. He adds in very coarse language, that " he had good reason to believe, " though he would not swear it, that there are now no other copies extant but his " own, which had belonged to Queen Elizabeth."

It appears from the Spectator, No. 389, that this book was sold at an auction for thirty pounds. It has been since sold at the exorbitant price of fifty pounds. A copy of it is now in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge, announced to be printed at Paris in 1583, nor is there any proof that it was printed in London. It is scarcely probable that a work professedly intended to propagate atheism, should be in the possession of the Queen. If the writings of Bruno are unjustly represented as atheistical, I cannot discover how it was inconsistent with the character of an English gentleman to patronise a learned foreigner. To Mr. Toland it must have been peculiarly grateful to enlist under his own banner of infidelity so amiable and virtuous a man as Sir Philip Sidney.

Dr. Warton's

Digitized by Google

atheism; that it should delight in a dark and clandestine association with impious and irreligious men? The excellence of transcendent worth is not seldom depreciated by an odious and disgraceful appellation. Giordano Bruno, born at Nola in the kingdom of Naples, was accused of atheism. While he refuted the subtleties and exposed the absurdities of the Aristotelian philosophy, he could scarcely avoid censuring the errors and corruptions, which defiled the

——— purity

Dr. Warton's remark, depends principally on the authority of Mr. Toland. [See the General Dictionary, Vol. III. p. 622.] The critique on this work of Bruno by Mr. Eustace Budgell, in the Spectator, No. 389, will induce the reader to consider it only as a very harmless production, founded upon a poetical fiction, and little adapted to make him a convert to atheism.

Bruno during his abode in England dedicated the "Heroici Furori" to Sir Philip Sidney. This work, interspersed with Italian verses, abounds with cabalistical chimæras: for, under figures which seem to represent the transports and orders of love, he pretends to raise the soul to the contemplation of the most sublime truths, and to eradicate all its imperfections. There are annexed to it some verses in commendation of the beauty of the English ladies.

(6) The English reader will be thoroughly convinced of the innocence of Bruno, if he be so fortunate as to meet with the following work, "The expulsion of the triumphant beast," translated from Jord. Bruno's Spaccio della bestia trionphante, Lond. 1713. 8vo. "Liber ob impressorum exemplarium paucitatem rarissimus."

See the first volume of the supplement to Bauer's "Bibliotheca "librorum rariorum universalis."

Digitized by Google

purity of the Christian religion in his own country. In fact, he first doubted and then denied the doctrine of transubstantiation—he did not profess that high veneration for the Virgin Mary, which is enforced in the church of Rome:—he detested idolatry,—and, when a crucifix was brought to him in his last moments, he shrunk from it, rejecting it with marks of scorn and indignation in his countenance. He was burnt at Rome in 1600, by a sentence of the Inquisition, as an atheist and a teacher of impiety. But it is more than probable that this sentence was not pronounced from a just and impartial tribunal. It will be very difficult to form a clear and distinct opinion of the real principles of this learned Neapolitan, without a more accurate knowledge of his writings. We have however the evidence of a candid and intelligent person in his favour, George Daniel Morhoff, who in his Polyhistor, expressly excludes him from the class of atheistical writers.—Having named many of them, he adds, "but I should not "reckon Giordano Bruno one of them: for, although in his "book "*of innumerables, and of the universe, and of the world*," he "hath maintained the plurality of worlds, yet I do not dis-"cover in him any vestiges of atheism." And again, "Giordano Bruno, a native of Nola, and an ingenious man, "as appears from his book concerning the universe and the

Digitized by Google

" world, and *deserving of a better fate*, wrote some tracts that " tended to explain the opinions of Raymond Lullius." His innocence is more strongly asserted in the following passage:—" Giordano Bruno in a single tract revived the " doctrine of the plurality of worlds, having advanced " arguments sufficiently plausible in support of it. He " suffered for the boldness of his writings by being burnt " alive. This punishment was unjust, as he cannot from " any thing inserted in that tract be openly convicted of " atheism, having only asserted what Nicolas Causinus and " Copernicus had taught before him."

May we not deduce an additional proof of his innocence from remarking, that the narrative of his behaviour at Rome during the two years that preceded his death, and also at the time of his execution, is composed by Jasper Scioppius, a man who seems to have imbibed the very spirit of calumny and abuse, who was in the habit of applying the most illiberal language of invective against learned men, and against princes and kings? He must have read the writings of Bruno with much inattention, when he explains " the triumphant beast," in the title-page of the book above-mentioned, to be the Pope, to whom there is not the most remote allusion in the whole volume. What confidence can

Digitized by Google

be reposed in the veracity of an author, who assures his reader, that the English were wont to whip the holy sacrament? It does not even appear from his partial narrative that Bruno was an atheist. Scioppius informs us, that he defended the doctrine of the plurality of worlds, and that he indulged himself in a variety of novel speculations. He ascribes to him several opinions, which are inconsistent with atheism, as—that "the Hebrews alone derive their origin "from Adam and Eve, and the other nations of the earth "from two persons whom God created the day before."—This proposition is not orthodox, yet it supposes the existence of a Deity, and consequently absolves Bruno from the imputation of atheism.

To what has been already said on the subject may be added the further testimony of Brucker, a writer of uncommon sagacity and exactness in his researches. In his history of philosophy, he hath carefully examined the charge of atheism brought against Bruno. He pronounces him innocent; observing that many of his opinions were fanciful and extravagant, but in no degree atheistical—that his crime was LUTHERANISM—a crime too atrocious for the severity of a Popish inquisition to allow the least relax-

Digitized by Google

ation of punishment (7). It may be deemed needless to observe, that Bruno's writings were prohibited to be read by the members of the church of Rome (8).

FROM this attack on the fair fame of Sir Philip Sidney, how grateful must it be to acknowledge a full acquiescence in the assertion of his noble biographer—"that he made the "religion he professed the firm basis of his life! For this "was his judgment, that our true-heartedness to the re- "formed religion in the beginning, brought peace, safety, and "freedom to us; concluding, that the wisest and best way "was that of the famous William Prince of Orange, who "never divided the consideration of estate from the cause "of religion." His claim to the approbation and praise of

mankind

(7) Even Vanini himself, when accused of atheism, that is a disbelief of a Supreme Being and consequently of a future state, firmly denied the charge, acknowledged his belief of the existence of a God, and taking up a straw that lay on the ground, he assured the judges before whom he was tried, that he was sufficiently convinced of that great truth by that straw alone, adducing arguments to show how impossible it was for Nature to create any thing.

(8) "Iordani Bruni libri et scripta omnia prohibentur."

Idea della storia dell' Italia letterata, &c. Tom. ii. p. 294.

Digitized by Google

mankind is not founded on writing well, but on living well. "His end was not writing, even while he wrote, nor "his knowledge moulded for tables and schools, but both "his wit and understanding bent upon his heart, to make "himself and others not in words and opinion, but in life "and action, good and great." Whatever applause is due to his genius, and to his erudition, much more is due to his goodness, to the innocence of his life, and to the unsullied purity of his manners. It was with him a favourite maxim, "no wisdom without courage, and no courage "without religion and honesty." His whole moral conduct was indeed irreproachable. "His heart and his tongue "went both one way, and so with every one that went with "the truth, as knowing no other kindred, party, or end." While many experienced the effects of his beneficence, it was never known that a single individual sustained the most trifling injury at his hands. Nor will it be difficult to conjecture the cause of Lord Orford's harsh animadversions on Sir Philip Sidney. His Lordship, disdaining to wear the mask of hypocrisy, avowed himself an infidel; and, strange to tell, he is said to have attributed his infidelity to the perusal of Fontenelle's beautiful treatise on the plurality of worlds. Sir Philip Sidney was a firm believer in the truths

Digitized by Google

of Christianity (9), and ended a virtuous life by a Christian death.

CAN it therefore be matter of surprise that this excellent person should become the subject of general encomium? The elegance of his manners, the versatility of his genius, adapting itself to the acquisition of universal knowledge—his unbounded munificence—his amiable demeanour in domestic life—his tender feelings for the miseries of those persecuted Protestants, who, in defence of their religion and liberties, resisted the savage insolence of Spanish tyranny—the suavity of his disposition, so alluring, that he was, as it were, educated in the lap of the Graces—an experience above his years—an invincible patience under the most acute sufferings—all these qualities will render his name grateful to future ages. His dignified and winning deportment filled every beholder with delight. "It likes me "much better," says Sidney himself, "when I find virtue in

——— "a fair

(9) "Walpoliana" p. 53. See an answer to Lord Orford's objection to Christianity from the apparent insignificancy of the human race, compared with the extent of the Universe in Dr. Beattie's "Evidences of the Christian Religion briefly and plainly "stated," Vol. ii. ch. 2.

Digitized by Google

"a fair lodging, than when I am bound to seek it in an "ill-favoured creature, like a pearl in a dunghill."

HUBERT LANGUET has furnished us with a most authentic information of his real character. So far from discovering any marks of gaiety or levity in his early years, while he was upon his travels, he had a mind composed, sedate, and serious, not only desirous of moderating his own passions, but restraining the behaviour of his companions, if they were inclined to exceed the bounds of decorum.—It appears from several passages in Languet's letters to him, that his disposition was not naturally that of cheerfulness. He advises him, as he was by nature less cheerful, to select companions, whose virtuous conversation would exhilarate his spirits. Of a picture of Sidney finished abroad, he observes that the painter had represented him somewhat sad and thoughtful; and expresses his wishes, that he had formed his countenance to cheerfulness when he sate for his picture (1). An intense application to study occasionally produced in him a depression of spirits. To

disperse

(1) Cum es naturâ minus hilaris, quærendi sunt tibi sodales, quorum honestâ consuetudine exhilareris. *Ep. xi.* Pictor expressit te subtristem et cogitabundum. Mallem fuisses vultu magis ad hilaritatem composito, cum pingendum te præbuisti. *Ep. xliii.*

Digitized by Google

disperse the gloom of melancholy which overshadowed his mind, nothing was more expedient than to leave that solitude and retirement in which he sequestered himself. Hence his much revered friend was always anxious to animate him in the pursuit of glory. He encouraged him in the most persuasive and energetic words, "not to stop in "the midst of his ascent to honour; not to cease, till he "arrived at the summit; that he might fulfil the warmest "expectations of his uncle the Earl of Leicester."—The natural sweetness of his voice, and the gentleness of his disposition, were almost proverbial. One of his contemporaries has styled him "the nectar-tongued Sidney" (2). And when attempts were made to depreciate his character, he bore patiently and without resentment the language of abuse which was uttered against him.

SIR JAMES PERROT (3) is said to have written the history of the noble birth, education, and singular good parts of Sir

——— Philip

(2) Many of his accomplishments are celebrated in the Cambridge collection of verses published on his death.

"Palladium pectus, sedes insignis honoris:
"Virtutum series, invicti robur Achillis,
"Ingenii splendor, vultûs formosa venustas,
"*Melleus ore sonus*, divinum mentis acumen." p. 63.

Digitized by Google

Philip Sidney. The most diligent inquiry after this tract has proved ineffectual. Nor can any authentic account be obtained of the work of Sir William Herbert, whom Anthony Wood calls "one William Herbert," the author of "Sidney or Baripenthes, breifely shadowing out the "rare and never-ending laudes of that most honorable and "praise-worthy Sir Philip Sidney, knight," printed by John Windet, 1586, 4to.

AMONG

(3) He was the author of a work entitled "A Discovery of Discontented Minds, "wherein their several sortes and purposes are described; especially such as go "beyond the seas. At Oxford printed by Joseph Barnes, printer to the University, "4to, 1596." This was his first publication, and unknown to Anthony Wood. It is discreetly and learnedly handled for a young man of twenty-five years of age, and founded upon a solid and loyal view of restraining those dangerous malecontents, whether scholars or soldiers, who did many of them in his time turn fugitives and renegades; settling themselves in foreign countries, especially under the umbrage of Spain, to negociate conspiracies, invasions, &c. with their traitorous correspondents in England. The author, at the end of his dedication to Robert Earl of Essex, subscribes himself James Perrot. He was the natural son of Sir John Perrot, Lord Deputy of Ireland. He died in 1636, having printed some other Tracts, but his Life of Sir Philip Sidney, never published, is most desirable, and would, in all probability, set forth that gallant and accomplished gentleman's virtues and actions in a more conspicuous light, than does appear in the faint and inexpressive draught that has been left us by his great friend Sir Fulke Greville.

See "Osborne's Catalogue of Pamphlets in the Harleian Library," No. 12, p. 3.

Digitized by Google

AMONG those who have attempted to celebrate his virtues, it would be improper not to name Mr. Samuel Daniel, who is pronounced by Mr. Drummond, of Hawthornden, "for "sweetness in ryming second to none," while in Davison's poems he is styled "Prince of English poets." He was not only a poet, but a faithful historian of England, from the reign of William I. to that of Edward III. Wilton was his best school, in which he applied himself to study under the soothing patronage of the Countess of Pembroke. He hath expressed his gratitude in many parts of his works; and particularly, in a poem, not devoid of merit, though inferior to many of his compositions in harmony of numbers and ornament of language, inscribed—"To the "angel spirit of the most excellent Sir Philip Sidney."

SINCE the revival of learning in Europe, it has been usual to commemorate the deaths of eminent men in verses written in various languages. Funeral elegies in forty different tongues were composed in 1657, and printed with the title of "Panglossia," to the memory of Peiresc. In England the accession of a new king, his marriage, the birth of his eldest son, the return of peace, the demise of royal or of noble personages, became objects of literary attention, and afforded subjects to the academic Muse. Is

Digitized by Google

it not to be regretted that this practice is growing into desuetude?

Both the Universities in England consecrated their tears to the memory of Sir Philip Sidney, lamenting his death in Hebrew, Greek, Latin, and Italian strains (4).

"To speak truth," says a French writer, "the virtue of "this man, his natural magnificent bounty, his adorned

"litera-

(4) "Interea horribili mactatum strage PHILLIPUM
"Heu iterumque iterumque, etiamque etiamque dolendum,
"Æterno elogio, quod possumus ac debemus,
"Luctibomique himnis, suaddque ornabimus omni,
"Dum Musæ calamos aut linguas Gratiæ habebunt,
"Aut virtuti aderit comes inseparabilis Hermes
"Magnanimos alto decorans heroas honore."

In obit. D. Phil. Sidnei Acad. Cantab. lachrymæ, p. 3.

"Tu felix, Sidneie, tui dum regia virtus,
"Dum pietas, dum verus honos, dum vita virescens
"Splendorem patriæ tulerant, Anglisque salutem:
"At nunc ter fœlix. Num te fælicior ullus?
"Qui patriam vitâ, vitam virtute coronas,
"Vulnere virtutem, decoras cum sanguine stirpem.
"Immortale tenes æternæ stemma salutis.
"Te princeps, procerum series dignissima flevit,
"Te pietas, te prisca fides, te docta juventus,
"Te te sacra cohors, te nos deflevimus omnes. *Ib.* p. 63.

Digitized by Google

" literature, and his sweet and mild behaviour well " deserved all this, yea and more (5)." Three volumes were published on this occasion;

1. Academiæ Cantabrigiensis lacrymæ tumulo nobilissimi Equitis D. Philippi Sidnei sacratæ per Alexandrum Nevilum. *Esai*, 40. Omnis caro fœnum, et omnis gloria ejus quasi flos fœni, *Psal.* 112. In memoriâ (autem) sempiternâ erit justus.

Londini, Anno salutis humanæ, CIↃ. IↃ. LXXXVII (6). Feb. XVI.

2. Peplus illustrissimi Viri D. Philippi Sidnæi supremis honoribus dicatus (7).

Ἀεὶ τῦτο Διος᾽ χὴραις μέλοι, ἀὶεν ἀοιδοις
Ὑμνειν ἀθανατυς, ὑμνειν ἀγαθῶν κλεα ἀνδρῶν.

Dignum laude virum
Musa vetat mori.

Oxonii, Anno salutis humanæ, 1587.

3. Exequiæ illustrissimi Equitis D. Philippi Sidnæi gratissimæ memoriæ ac nomini impensæ.

Paulum sepultæ distat inertiæ
Celata virtus. *Oxonii, Anno Domini*, 1587.

THE reader of these volumes will scarcely forbear to smile at the different forms into which some of the poems

——— are

(5) See " the true Annals and Royal History of the famous Empresse, Queen of " England, &c." translated from the French by Abraham Darcie. *Lond.* 1625, *Fol.*

(6) An error of the press for CIↃIↃLXXXVI.

(7) Of the word peplum, denoting the title of a book, See " Beloe's Translation of " the Attic Nights of Aulus Gellius," p. iv. xi.

Digitized by Google

are reduced by their respective authors. Here we behold an altar, a column, a pyramid, a rhomb, a pair of wings, each of them exhibiting an eulogy on the virtues of Sir Philip Sidney, not to mention the anagrams and acrostics which are interspersed. Similar conceits prevailed among the later Greek minor poets. Several of the Latin Poems in these three collections are prefixed to the ARCADIA in some of the editions of that work (8).

THE natural goodness of his heart, displayed itself in acts of munificence to learned men both at home and abroad (9). And during the latter period of his life, when the wants of the soldiers in the Netherlands called forth the exertions of his liberality, his generous disposition subjected him to many pecuniary difficulties. Hence, in conformity to the earnest desire of Sir Philip Sidney, which has been already noticed, the discharge of his debts engaged the attention of his brother, who was at the same time extremely anxious to express his kindness and affection to Lady Sidney.

ELIZABETH,

(8) See the Appendix, No. VI.

(9) " Largiri solitus tot opes, tot præmia Musis
" Debueras animæ parcior esse tuæ." *Ph. Sidnæi Popkus, p. 54.*

Digitized by Google

ELIZABETH, the only child of Sir Philip Sidney, was born in 1585. She married Roger Manners the fifth Earl of Rutland. In 1588 this young nobleman was a student in Queen's College, Cambridge. A letter to him from his relation the Earl of Essex, dated at Greenwich, on the fourth day of January, 1596, and containing some directions for travelling, is yet extant. He continued so firmly attached to Essex, that having joined him in the insurrection, which proved so fatal to his life, he was thereupon committed to the tower, where he remained a prisoner till the accession of James I., who not only delivered him from prison, but appointed him ambassador to the King of Denmark for the purpose of investing him with the order of the garter. He died without issue in 1612.

BEN JONSON has addressed an epistle to this lady. He has also written an epigram in her praise, beginning with these commendatory lines on her father:

" That poets are far rarer births than kings
" Your noblest father prov'd; like whom before
" Or then or since, about our muses springs
" Came not that soul exhausted so their store."

THE puritans seem to have had a great veneration towards her, at least those of them who entertained an

Digitized by Google

enthusiastic attachment to the song of Solomon, and especially to one particular version, styled, "The poem of "poems or Sion's muse, containing the divine song of "King Solomon, divided into eight eclogues, and dedicated "to the sacred virgin Mrs. Elizabeth Sidney, sole daughter "of the ever-admired Sir Philip Sidney." [With the initial letters J. M. Gervase or Jervase Markham,] 1595, 4to. Prefixed to this volume is a sonnet by W. E. "to his deere mistris, Elizabeth Sidney." She survived her husband three years, dying in 1615.

A Latin poem on her birth was composed by Scipio Gentilis, entitled "Nereus, sive de natali Elizabethæ "illustriss. Philippi Sydnæi filiæ. Lond. 1585."

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY in his last will "bequeathed and "endowed Dame Frances Sidney, his wife, of the one "half of all his mannors, lands, tenements, &c. for and "during her natural life only." He also made "certain "provisions with regard to the issue with which she was "then with child." This lady, destinated, according to Sir Robert Naunton, to the bed of honour, was afterward married to Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, the dear, and much-esteemed friend of her late husband, and, like him,

Digitized by Google

the patron of letters, "elegant in his manners, gentle, and "humane" (1). His marriage displeased the Queen, who affected to consider it as derogatory to the honour of his house, or rather because it had been concluded without her knowledge and consent. This illustrious person must have been beloved by all the muses for his protection of Spenser when likely to perish from want in the streets of Dublin, and for ordering his funeral in Westminster Abbey with becoming solemnity. "If Essex was no poet," says Mr. Warton in his history of English poetry, "few noblemen "of his age were more courted by poets. From Spenser "to the lowest rhymer he was the subject of numerous "songs or popular ballads."

THE Earl of Essex suffered death on the scaffold on the twenty-fifth day of February, 1600, in the thirty-fourth year of his age. He left one son—Robert—seduced from his allegiance to his king, and in 1642, appointed to be general of the forces, then raised by the authority of the long parliament—and two daughters; 1. Frances, who became the

(1) Monsieur de Voltaire with his usual inaccuracy observes, "that of Queen Eliza-"beth's favourites Robert Devereux was the first, and the Earl of Essex the second." —Could he really be ignorant that they were the same person?

Digitized by Google

the wife of William, Earl of Hertford, and afterward Marquis of Hertford and Duke of Somerset; and, 2. Dorothy, first married to Sir Henry Shirley, of Stanton-Harold, in Lincestershire, Baronet, and after his death to William Stafford, Esquire, of Blatherwick, in Northamptonshire. These two sisters, with their brother having been attainted on the death of their father, were restored by an act of Parliament, in the first year of the reign of King James I.

THE third husband of Sir Philip Sidney's widow, was Richard de Burgh, the fourth Earl of Clan-Rickard in the kingdom of Ireland, and usually called the great Earl of Clan-Rickard, equally elegant in his person, and graceful in his demeanour, with Sidney and Essex; "a gallant gen-"tleman who exceeded the wildness of his native country "by his second education, and who exceeded his education "by the happiness of his wedlock; and though peradven-"ture some vain men do account it but as two threads put "together, he did make it his band, by the advantage of "which he did so twist himself into the English virtues, "that nothing remained in him as spun from Ireland, as "Ireland doth now stand (2)." We learn from Mr. Camden,

that

(2) Codrington's Life and Death of Robert Earl of Essex.

Digitized by Google

that "his valour and untainted loyalty to the English were "signalized at a time when the English interest was at the "lowest ebb." He had the honour of bearing the banner of Ireland at the funeral procession of Queen Elizabeth. In 1628 he was created Earl of St. Albans. He died in 1635, leaving one daughter, Honora, who became the second wife of John Marquis of Winchester, and one son, Ulrick de Burgh, general of the King's army in Ireland, a most zealous servant of his sovereign Charles the First, in opposing the attempts of the Irish rebels; and the immediate successor of the Marquis of Ormond in his lieutenancy (3).

LADY Clan-Rickard, the daughter of that Walsingham, who was the support and ornament of the Protestant religion, became a convert to Popery after the death of her second husband the Earl of Essex (4). The demise of her father happened previous to her third marriage.

THE

(3) He was a person of honour, good sense, and loyalty. Notwithstanding the very severe treatment he met with from the Earl of Strafford, (of whom it is remarked that he made himself more personal enemies than any minister ever did,) he acted with zeal against the Irish rebels in defence of the English interest; and had he been better supported, would have done more service.

See "the Hardwick Papers," Vol. 2, p. 126, 207.

Digitized by Google

THE noble author of "the Dialogues of the Dead" hath introduced into his work a very pleasing and interesting conversation between "Louise de Coligni, Princess of "Orange, and Frances Walsingham, Countess of Essex "and of Clan-Rickard, before Lady Sidney." In this conversation the characters of each are properly sustained. The former lady, the daughter of the Admiral Coligni, preserving her dignity of deportment, disdained to think of any inferior connexion after her marriage, first with the virtuous and admirable Teligni (5), and then with a Prince so truly great as the Prince of Orange, whose soul was congenial with her own. She admired his heroic mind: she shared with him all his cares, and assured herself that he looked down from heaven upon her, with tenderness and affection, as his fellow-labourer in the divine

work

(4) Sir Henry Wotton in his parallel of Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex and George Villiars Duke of Buckingham, remarks, that "they were both married to very "virtuous ladies, and sole heirs, and left issue of their sex, and both their wives were "converted to contrary religions." *Reliquiæ Wottonianæ, p.* 183.

(5) Charles, Lord of Teligni, a man of the mildest manners, and of the most winning deportment, had something so sweet and pleasing in his countenance, that, amidst the horrours of the Parisian massacre, those persons who were first sent to assassinate him, remained in suspense, and had not resolution enough to strike the blow. *Sully's Memoirs.*

Digitized by Google

work of freeing and delivering his country. She devoted her whole time to the education of her son, the inheritor of his father's exalted virtues and eminently great abilities. Hence she expresses her surprise, that the widow of Sir Philip Sidney, and of the Earl of Essex, should marry a third husband, and that this third husband should be the Earl of Clan-Rickard, a nobleman unambitious and unenterprising. Lady Clan-Rickard in her answer, defends the propriety of her own conduct, by remarking, that her two first husbands were too much engaged in the pursuit of glory to regard the duties of domestic life, that with her last, who lived in privacy and retirement, she enjoyed more solid felicity, than she had ever known with Sidney and Essex, in all the pride of their greatness, when England, and indeed all Europe, resounded with their praise.

It will be difficult to present the reader with an accurate description of the works of Sir Philip Sidney. Some of his letters are inserted in the Sidney papers, published by Collins: others are deposited in the British Museum, and in different libraries. We cannot sufficiently lament that those which he addressed to Hubert Languet and to William Prince of Orange, are not now extant.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE

WORKS OF SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.

1. THE Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia, defined by Phillips, the nephew of Milton, " a poem in design, though for the most part in solute oration." The first edition, in which the text is divided into chapters, appeared in 1590 4to., the second in 1593, and the third in 1598, all printed in London, by William Ponsonbie. There is a remarkable print in the edition of 1593: In a compartment is at top a boar passant, on a wreath; on the sides an Arcadian shepherd and an Amazon; at bottom a tablet with a boar making toward some flowers growing about—and a scroll with this motto, *non tibi spiro* (6). Mr. Whyte in a letter to Sir Robert Sidney, dated on the first day of September, 1599, writes, that " the Arcadia is now printed in " Scotland, according to the best edition, which will make " them good cheap, but is very hurtful to Ponsonbie, who " held them at a very high rate: he must sell as others " doe, or they will lye upon his hands."—Mrs. Dorothy

Stanley,

(6) Ames's Typographical Antiquities.

Digitized by Google

Stanley, encouraged by a numerous list of subscribers, published "Arcadia modernized, fol. 1725."

2. "ASTROPHEL and Stella:" wherein the excellence of sweet poesy is concluded; to the end of which are added, sundry other rare sonnets of divers noblemen and gentlemen: printed for T. Newan, 1591, 4to.

3. "THE defence of poesy," 1595, 4to. It was afterward usually printed along with the Arcadia. In 1787, Mr. Thomas Warton, the poetry professor at Oxford, edited it along with "observations on poetry and eloquence from "Ben Jonson's Discoveries."

4. "SONETS:" several of which appeared in Constable's "Diana," 1594; but were afterward annexed to the Arcadia, along with Astrophel and Stella.

THE sonnet, a species of poetical composition, invented by Petrarch, was no sooner introduced into England, than it obtained many imitators. Sidney composed several in praise of the lady whom he celebrates under the name of Stella. The following sprightly one, addressed by him to

Digitized by Google

those who attempted this kind of writing, has been much admired:

" You that do search for ev'ry purling stream,
" Which from the root of old Parnassus flows;
" And every flower, not sweet perhaps, which grows
" Near thereabouts, into your poems wring;
" You that do Dictionaries' method bring
" Into your rhimes, running in rattling rows;
" You that poor Petrarch's long-deceased woes
" With new-born sighs, and wit disguised sing,
" You take wrong ways; those far-fetch'd helps be such
" As do bewray a want of inward touch.
" And sure at length stol'n goods do come to light.
" But if, both for your love and skill your name
" You seek to nurse at the full breast of fame,
" STELLA behold, and then begin t' indite.

5. " A remedie for love."

6. " THE Lady of May, a masque." These two last performances are generally printed along with the Arcadia.

7. " INSTRUCTIONS for travellers, by Rob. Earle of " Essex, *Sir Philip Sidney*, and Secretary Davison, 1633." A manuscript copy of this letter of advice to his brother Robert Sidney, is extant in the library of Trinity College,

Digitized by Google

Dublin. This letter is inserted in Seward's Biographiana, Vol. ii. p. 370.

8. "VALOUR anatomized in a fancie, 1581." Printed at the end of Cottoni posthuma, 1672.

9. IN a volume printed with the title of "England's "Helicon," or a collection of songs, 4to. 1600, are inserted many songs by Sir Philip Sidney. In "England's Par- "nassus, 1600." are also some of his sonnets.—It hath been already remarked, that in Davison's poems, 1611, p. 17—21, are two Pastorels, made by Sir Philip Sidney, upon his meeting with his two worthy friends, Sir Edward Dier, and M. Fulke Grevill. The second Pastorel appears under the title of "Dispraise of a courtly life."

10. AN English version of the Psalms of David. A copy of this version, curiously bound in crimson velvet, is said to be in the library at Wilton; which Mr. Ballard in his memoirs of several ladies of Great Brtiain, &c. attributes to the Countess of Pembroke. It seems very probable, and may I think, be easily inferred from Dr. Donne's poem on the translation of the psalms by Sir Philip Sidney and his

Digitized by Google

sister, that it was the joint work of them both (7). Sir Richard Steele has inserted in the Guardian, No. 18, a version of the thirty-seventh psalm, by Sir Philip Sidney, whom he commends as a noble example of courage and devotion.

A fair copy of this version is among the MSS. in the Library of Trinity College, Cambridge, with this title "The Psalms of David, translated into English Verse, by "that noble and virtuous Gent. Sir Philip Sidney."

11. "A woorke concerning the trewnesse of the Christian "Religion, written in French against Atheists, Epicures, "Paynims, Jews, Mahumetists, and other infidels. By "Philip of Mornay, Lord of Plessie Marlie. Begunne to "be translated into English by Sir Philip Sidney, Knight, "and at his request finished by Arthur Golding (8). Im-

printed

(7) Donne's Poems, 1719, 12mo. p. 299.

(8) Mr. Arthur Golding may be deemed almost as voluminous a translator as Philemon Holland. In his name were printed versions of "the eight books of Caius "Julius Cæsar—the history of Justine—Pomponius Mela—Julius Solinus Poly-histor "—the fifteen Books of P. Ovidius Naso—seven books of benefyting from Seneca, "&c. &c."

Digitized by Google

printed at London, 1587 and 1592, 4to" (9). This translation, revised and corrected by Mr. Thomas Wilcocks, and by him inscribed to Henry Frederick, Prince of Wales, was reprinted in 1604; since which time it hath been reviewed and the fourth time published by the last editor, and purged from sundry faults escaped heretofore through ignorance, carelessness, or other corruption, London, 1617. The original work was undertaken by the advice and at the request of Hubert Languet (1).

THE translation of the fourteenth chapter of this book, tending to prove that the soul of man is immortal, was reprinted in London, in 1789.

IN the list of Sir Philip Sidney's friends is enrolled the name of the author of this treatise. " I am glad," says Languet,

(9) Francis de Mezieres, a native of Paris, during his residence at Venice, contracted the most intimate friendship with Father Paul. He was well known to Sir Philip Sidney, having been strongly recommended to him, under the name of Francis Perrot, by Hubert Languet. He translated into the Italian language two treatises of du Plessis—" De veritate Christianæ religionis ;" and " De Ecclesiâ." While an Italian Work, of which he was the author, exposed him to the inveterate resentment of the Roman Pontiffs, he was patronised by Henry IV. of France.

(1) This work was also translated into the Italian language by Francis Perrot, a very learned Nobleman, and the intimate friend of Du Plessis.

Digitized by Google

Languet, " that you have contracted a close friendship with " du Plessis. You can possess no treasure more valuable " than such friends (2)." He was the most learned among the nobles, and the most noble among the learned—the great advocate and the bright ornament of the Protestant Religion, as well by his excellent life as his incomparable writings (3). These writings, and particularly his celebrated work entitled " The Mystery of Iniquity," have the honour of being admitted among the heretical volumes of the Roman Index, prohibited to be read by the members of the church of Rome. He was the favourite of Henry of Navarre, afterward Henry IV. King of France, whose abjuration of the reformed Religion he strenuously opposed. But failing in his attempts to prevent this

measure,

(2) " Gaudeo te jam arctiorem amicitiam contraxisse cum domino Plesseio. Nihil " ejusmodi amicis pretiosius comparare tibi potes." *Epist. lix.*

Languet's friendship with this excellent man commenced in 1569. " Il prit M. " du Plessis en telle affection, qu'on remarquoit en l'un une vraye amitié paternelle, en " l'autre une reverence filiale."

Histoire de la vie de Messire Philippe de Mornay, p. 12.

(3) " Post Calvinum et Bezam nullus theologorum tam bene scripsit ut " Mornæus." *Scaligerana.*

The writings of this good man were universally admired. A few days before her death, Queen Elizabeth directed some meditations to be read to her, and among others those of Monsieur du Plessis.

Digitized by Google

measure, he departed from the French Court, and totally devoted himself to study in a life of privacy and retiredness.

As this version was first printed in 1587, about seven months after Sir Philip Sidney's death, we may conclude that the greatest part of it flowed from his pen. If any argumentation were necessary to vindicate the character of the translator from the imputation of atheism, it might be easily supplied from considering that mode of employment, in which his hours of leisure were spent during the latter years of his short life. If an alienation from his belief of Christianity had taken place in his heart, how extravagantly absurd must it have been in him to promote the interests of true Religion, by presenting his countrymen with a work composed for the express purpose of defending its truth against the rude assaults of infidelity (4)?

ON

(4) It is justly observed by Arthur Golding, "that if any Atheist, Infidel, or Jew, "having read this work with advisement, shall yet denye the Christian Religion to be "the true and only path-way to eternall felicitie, and all other religions to be mere "vanitie and wickednesse, he must needes shew himself to be either utterly voyd even "of humane sence, or els obstinatly and wilfully to impugn the manifest trueth, against "the continuall testimonie of his owne conscience."

Digitized by Google

On the contrary, it is pleasing to reflect that the most accomplished gentleman and most complete scholar of his age was deeply impressed with a sense of Religion—that he delighted in contemplating the doctrines of Revelation—the existence of one supreme Being—the creation of the world by him, and his providential government of it—the immortality of the soul of man—the prospect of future blessedness—the redemption of mankind by the Messiah, who was promised to the Jews for the salvation of the whole world. These and other truths of Christianity are happily illustrated and powerfully enforced in this excellent volume of Du Plessis, the translation of which into his native language was the last work of Sir Philip Sidney, bequeathed by him to posterity as a durable monument of his piety and of his learning.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

APPENDIX.

No. 1.

TEN precepts which William, Lord Burghley, Lord High Treasurer of England, gave to his second son Robert Cecil, afterward Earl of Salisbury *.

" Son Robert,

" The virtuous inclinations of thy matchless mother, by whose tender and godly care thy infancy was governed, together with thy education under so zealous and excellent a tutor, puts me in rather assurance than hope, that thou art not ignorant of that *summum bonum*, which is only able to make thee happy, as well in thy death as life; I mean, the true knowledge and worship of thy Creatour and Redeemer; without which all other things are vaine and miserable. So that, thy youth being guided by so sufficient a teacher, I make no doubt but he will furnish thy life with divine and moral documents. Yet, that I may not cast off the care beseeming a parent towards his child; or that thou shouldest have cause to derive thy whole felicity and welfare rather from others than from whence thou receivedst thy breath and being; I think it fit and agreeable to the affection I beare thee, to help thee with such rules and advertisements for the squaring of thy life, as are rather gained by experience, than by much reading. To the end, that entring into this ex-

orbitant

* These Precepts have been already printed. The copy here presented to the reader is inserted in " Peck's Desiderata Curiosa," Lib. i. p. 63.

Digitized by Google

orbitant age, thou mayest be the better prepared to shunne those scandalous courses, whereunto the world and the lack of experience may easily draw thee. And, because I will not confound thy memory, I have reduced them into ten precepts; and, next unto *Moses* tables, if thou imprint them in thy mind, thou shalt reap the benefit, and I the content. And they are these following:

I.

"When it shall please God to bring thee to man's estate, use great providence and circumspection in chusing thy wife. For from thence will spring all thy future good or evil. And it is an action of life, like unto a stratagem of warre: wherein man can erre but once. If thy estate be good, match near home and at leisure; if weak, far off and quickly. Enquire diligently of her disposition, and how her parents have been inclined in their youth. Let her not be poore, how generous soever. For a man can buy nothing in the market with gentility. Nor chuse a base and uncomely creature altogether for wealth; for it will cause contempt in others and lothing in thee. Neither make choice of [a] dwarfe or [a] fool; for by the one thou shalt beget a race of pigmies; the other will be thy continual disgrace, and it will yrke thee to hear her talk. For thou shalt find it, to thy great grief, that there is nothing more fulsome than a she fool.

"And, touching the guiding of thy house, let thy hospitallitie be moderate; and, according to the meanes of thy estate, rather plentiful than sparing, but not costly. For I never knew any man grow poore by keeping an orderly table. But some consume themselves through secret vices, and their hospitalitie bears the blame. But banish swinish drunkards out of thine house, which is a vice impairing health, consuming much and makes no shew. I never heard praise ascribed to the drunkard, but [for] the well-bearing [of] his drink. Which is a better commendation for a brewer's horse or a dray-man, than for either a gentleman or [a] serving man. Beware thou spend not above three of four parts of thy revennewes; nor above a third part of that in thy house. For the other two parts will do more than defray

Digitized by Google

thy extraordinaries, which always surmount the ordinary by much; otherwise thou shalt live like a rich beggar, in continual want. And the needy man can never live happily, nor contentedly. For every disaster makes him ready to mortgage or sell. And that gentleman who sells an acre of land, sells an ounce of credit: For gentility is nothing else but antient riches. So that, if the foundation shall at any any time sinke, the building must needs follow. So much for the first precept.

II.

"Bring thy children up in learning and obedience, yet without outward austerity. Praise them openly, reprehend them secretly. Give them good countenance and convenient maintenance according to thy abilities, otherwise thy life will seeme their bondage, and what portion thou shalt leave them at thy death, they will thank death for it and not thee. And I am perswaded that the foolish cockering of some parents, and the over-stern carriage of others, causeth more men and women to take ill courses, than their own vicious inclinations. Marry thy daughters in time lest they marry themselves; and suffer not thy sonnes to pass the ALPES. For they shall learne nothing there but pride, blasphemy, and atheism. And if by travell they gett a few broken languages, that shall profit them nothing more than to have one meat served in divers dishes. Neither, by my consent, shalt thou train them up in warres. For he that sets up his rest to live by that profession can hardly be an honest man or a good Christian. Besides, it is a science no longer in request then use. For souldiers in peace are like chimneys in summer.

III.

"Live not in the country without corn and cattle about thee. For he that putteth his hand to the purse for every expence of household, is like him that keepeth water in a sieve. And, what provision thou shalt want, learn to buy it at the best hand. For there is one penny saved in four, betwixt buying in thy need, and when the markets and seasons serve fittest for it. Be not served with kinsmen, or friends, or men intreated to stay, for they expect much and doe little; nor with such

Digitized by Google

as are amorous, for their heads are intoxicated. And keep rather two too few than one too many. Feed them well, and pay them with the most; and then thou may'st boldly require service at their hands.

IV.

"LET thy kindred and allies be welcome to thy house and table. Grace them with thy countenance, and farthur them in all honest actions. For by this meanes thou shalt so double the band of nature, as thou shalt find them so many advocates to plead an apology for thee behind thy back. But shake off those glow-wormes, I mean parasites and sycophants, who will feed and fawn upon thee in the summer of prosperitie, but, in an adverse storme, they will shelter thee no more then an arbour in winter.

V.

"BEWARE of suretyship for thy best friends. He that payeth another man's debts, seeketh his own decay. But, if thou canst not otherwise chuse, rather lend thy mony thyself upon good bonds, although thou borrow it. So shalt thou secure thyself and pleasure thy friend. Neither borrow money of a neighbour or a friend, but of a stranger, where, paying for it, thou shalt hear no more of it. Otherwise thou shalt eclipse thy credit, lose thy freedom, and yet pay as dear as to another. But in borrowing of mony be precious of thy word. For he that hath care of keeping dayes of payment is lord of another man's purse.

VI.

"UNDERTAKE no suit against a poor man without receiving much wrong. For besides [that] thou makest him thy compeer, it is a base conquest to triumph, where there is small resistance. Neither attempt law against any man before thou be fully resolved that thou hast right on thy side: and then spare not for either money or paines. For a cause or two so followed and obtained will free thee from suits a great part of thy life.

Digitized by Google

VII.

Be sure to keep some great man thy friend, but trouble him not for trifles. Compliment him often with many, yet small gifts, and of little charge. And, if thou hast cause to bestow any gratuity, let it be something which may be daily in sight. Otherwise, in this ambitious age, thou shalt remain like a hop without a pole, live in obscurity, and be made a foot-ball for every insulting companion to spurn at.

VIII.

" Towards thy superiors be humble, yet generous: with thine equals familiar yet respective. Towards thine inferiors shew much humanity, and some familiarity: as to bow the body, stretch forth the hand, and to uncover the head, with such-like popular compliments. The first prepares thy way to advancement. The second makes thee knowne for a man well bred. The third gains a good report, which once got is easily kept. For right humanitie takes such deep root in the minds of the multitude, as they are easilier gained by unprofitable courtesies, then by churlish benefits. Yet I advise thee not to affect or neglect popularitie too much. Seeke not to be *Essex*: shunne to be *Rawleigh*.

IX.

" Trust not any man with thy life, credit, or estate. For it is meer folly for a man to enthrall himself to his friend, as though, occasion being offered, he should not dare to become the enemie.

X.

" Be not scurrilous in conversation, nor satyricall in thy jests. The one will make thee unwelcome to all company; the other pull on quarrels, and get the[e] hatred of thy best friends. For suspitious jests (when any of them savour of truth) leave a bitterness in the mindes of those which are touched. And, albeit I have already

Digitized by Google

pointed at this inclusively; yet I think it necessary to leave it to thee as a speciall caution. Because I have seen many so prone to quip and gird, as they would rather loose their friend than their jest. And if perchance their boiling braine yield a quaint scoffe, they will travell to be delivered of it, as a woman with child. These nimble fancies are but the froth of wit."

No. 2.

Mr. Robert Dorsett, one of the preceptors of Mr. Philip Sidney, at Oxford, seems to have left the University in 1576, when he retired to Ewelme in Oxfordshire. The education of Mr. Robert Sidney, the second son of Sir Henry Sidney, was intrusted to his care. In 1579, he was promoted to the Deanery of Chester. He enjoyed this dignity for a very short time, dying in 1580. Many of his letters to Mr. Philip Sidney, are now extant in manuscript. The following is inserted as a specimen of his Latin style.

" *Ad illustrissimum dominum Philippum Sidneium hæ dentur literæ.*

" Si jam tandem certum sit consilium itineris ad nos tui (cultissime domine) quod " nuper ad me rumore delatum est, equidem primum gaudeo tenere te, quam optabas, " occasionem illum aliquando locum adeundi, ubi partem aliquam ætatis in bonis literis " (audeo dicere) veram ad voluptatem et utilitatem tuam egisti; deinde mihi gra- " tulor, quód in illis te sedibus florentem videre liceat, in quibus præclara totius vitæ " dignitatisque tuæ fundamenta, me spectante tuisque rebus optima quæque cupiente, " posuisti. Cæterum illâ gratiâ contendo, quæ mihi tecum magna semper et illustris

Digitized by Google

" fuit, ut, in quodcunque tempus ceciderit adventus tuus, meam domum, quam ego
" verè dixerim tuam, divertas; quæ, quanquam minus est instructa ad excipiendam
" dignitatem tuam, tamen non dubito id quidem, quin officiosam domini voluntatem
" libenter amplexere. Hæc sunt quæ Argallo nostro tam opportuno nuncio literis
" consignanda putavi. Valet Robertus tuus et nos valemus, teque omnibus divinæ
" gratiæ et sempiternæ laudis ornamentis amplificatum diutissimè vivere et valere,
" ita nobis omnia, quæ optamus, contingant, ut vehementer etiam atque etiam velimus.
" Vale.

" Evelmii, 16° calend. Junii 1576.

" Tuus ad arbitrium tuum,

" ROBERTUS DORSETT."

It may not be improper to add two letters written by Mr. Philip Sidney, while he was a scholar at Oxford: the one a Latin epistle of gratitude to Sir William Cecil for favours to him and his father; the other in English to the same person whom he requests to give a canonry of Christ Church to Mr. Thornton.

" *To the Right Honorable Sir Willia Cecil, knighte, her Majesties principall Secretarie;*
" *yeve these with speede.*

" RIGHT HONORABLE,

" I am forced for better expedition to use an unaccustomed maner of writinge
" unto yowe, the cause proceedinge from a reporte of sum whom neither can I judge
" friendlie to my selfe, nor yet indifferente towards him from whom they seke by
" malice to prevente and detaine his worthie preferment sued for and obtained by
" his honorable benefactors. I mean my singular good L. my Lorde of Leicestre
" and especiallie your selfe by whose favor (attained by the request of my frendes
" and his deserte towards me, assisted by the worthiness of his life and learninge)
" Mr. Thornton, my reder, hathe unto him graunted the next præferment of a
" canonrie in this Colleage of Christe Churche. And sithence it hathe pleased God

Digitized by Google

" (as I gave you humblie to understande in my leste letters) to calle unto his mercie
" one Thomas Daie, by meane whereof it resteth in yo^r honorable favor to presente
" (accordinge to yo^r former p^tence) him as well for whose cause as divers others I
" do accounte myselfe no lesse bounde then I oughte. For that it is verie constantlie
" reported that Mr. Tobie Mathew's frendes shoulde use in his behalfe some
" ernest sute unworthie their callinges (because it was used before the deathe of
" the incumbente) by the which it should seeme they sought rather by spite to
" prevent the one than honestlie to preferre the other, these are therefore most
" humblie to requeste suche your wonted favor as neither your honorable benefitt
" may be revoked, my humble and earneste sute prevented, neither the person him-
" selfe so discredited, but yet he may with your favor enjoye his advowson by your
" meanes obtained and your selfe promised. Thus humblie comendinge my dutie
" unto your good opinion, my selfe preste at your commandements, I humblie ende,

" From Oxforde, this xxvii^th of Februarie. A. 1569.

|| ||

" Yours in a humble sorte

" as your owne

|| ||

" PHILIP SIDNEY."

" Non sum nescius, honoratissime vir, jure me posse in reprehensionem tuam in-
" cidere, quod tanti temporis intervallo nullas ad te dederim literas, quum et eas te
" sæpius expectare et quantumvis rudes boni consulere, remuncrarique cumulatissimè
" compertum habeam, unde quidem non injusta ingratitudinis suspicio oriri potest
" quâ nullum vitium fædius, nullum facinus indignius, nullum denique scœlus gravius
" semper existimavi; hæc namque in adolescente inhumana est, in ætatis integræ
" viro animadvertenda, in sene plane impia est. Quare cogitet quæso honor tuus
" nihil quicquam a me abesse longius, nihil quod magis declinare cupiam | excusa-
" tionem afferre possem et loci et temporis et fortasse justam, cæterum ut negligentiæ
" alicujus culpam fatear, non statues spero in confitentem quicquam acerbius. Plura

Digitized by Google

" et longiora scriberem, tibique pro singulari tuâ erga me patremque humanitate
" et mirificâ bonitate pluribus gratias agerem, si scirem vel te longiores literas desi-
" derare, vel me pro exiguâ meâ facultate id præstare posse. Sed quid plura
" chartis? habeo loquentes literas quæ te de paternis meisque rebus fusius possint
" erudire. Vale, meque dignitatis tuæ observantissimū, ut cæpisti sic quæso perge
" amare.

" Oxonii, VIII. Jul. Aº. 1569.

" Tibi obsequentissimus

" PHILIPPUS SIDNEIUS."

Digitized by Google

No. 3.

The following specimens of English verses adapted to Roman metre are selected from a very scarce volume.

Hexameters upon the never enough praised Sir Philip Sidney.

What can I now suspect, or what can I feare any longer?
Oft did I fear, oft hope, whilst life in Sidney remained.
Of nothing now can I despaire, for nought can I hope for.
This good is in misery, when great extremity grieves us,
That neither hope of good, nor fear of worse can affright us.
And can I then complaine, when no complaint can availe me?
How can I seem to be discontent, or what can I weep for?
He lives eternall, with endless glory bedecked;
Yea still on earth he lives, and still shall live by the Muses.

Davison's Poems, 1611. *p.* 162.

An epigram to Sir Philip Sidney in elegiacall verse, translated out of Jodell the French poet.

Cambridge, worthy Philip, by this verse builds thee an altar
Gainst time and tempest strong to abide for ever,
That praise of verses no length of time can abolish
With Greece and Italy purchased endlesse honour.
I then pursuing their steps like glory to purchase
Will make thy memory famous in after ages,
And in these measured verses thy glory be sounded
So be thy holy favour helpe to my holy fury. *Ib. p.* 162.

Digitized by Google

Sapphicks upon the passion of Christ.

Hatred eternal, furious revenging,
Mercilesse raging, bloody persecuting,
Scandalous speeches, odious revilings.
Causelesse abhorring.

Impious scoffings by the very abjects,
Dangerous threatning by the priests anointed,
Death full of torment in a shamefull order
Christ did abide here.

He that in glory was above the angels,
Changed his glory for an earthly carkasse,
Yielded his glory to a sinful outcast
Glory refusing.

He that in bondage many sinnes retained,
He for his goodness, for his only goodness,
Brought from hel-torments to the joyes of heaven
Not to be numbred.

Dead in offences, by his ayde revived,
Quickened in spirit, by the grace he yeeldeth,
Sound than his praises, to the world's amazement,
Thankfully singing.

Ibid. p. 166.

Digitized by Google

No. 4.

The following prayer is said to have been used by King Charles I. in the time of his captivity.

O POWERFUL and eternal God! to whom nothing is so great, that it may resist; or so small that it is contemned; look upon my misery with thine eye of mercy, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limit out some proportion of deliverance unto me, as to thee shall seem most convenient: Let not injury, O Lord, triumph over me; and let my faults by thy hand be corrected; and make not my unjust enemies the ministers of thy justice; but yet, my God, if in thy wisdom this be the aptest chastisement for my unexcusable transgressions; if this ungrateful bondage be fittest for my over-high desires; if the pride of my (not enough humble) heart be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yield unto thy will, and cheerfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt have me suffer: Only thus much let me crave of thee, (let my craving, O Lord, be accepted of, since it even proceeds from thee) that by thy goodness, which is thyself, thou wilt suffer some beam of thy majesty so to shine in my mind, that I who in my greatest afflictions acknowledge it my noblest title to be thy creature, may still depend confidently on thee. Let calamity be the exercise, but not the overthrow of my virtue. O let not their prevailing power be to my destruction. And if it be thy will, that they more and more vex me with punishment, yet, O Lord, never let their wickedness have such a hand, but that I may still carry a pure mind and stedfast resolution ever to serve thee, without fear or presumption, yet with that humble confidence which may best please thee; so that at the last I may come to thy eternal kingdom, through the merits of thy Son, our alone saviour, Jesus Christ. Amen.

The Works of Charles I. Fol. 1662. *p.* 197.

Digitized by Google

No. 5.

Antient History presents us with three instances of patient and self-denying virtue in situations somewhat similar to those of Sir Philip Sidney.

1. "And David was then in an hold, and the garrison of the Philistines was then "in Bethlehem. And David longed and said, O that one would give me drink of "the water of the well of Bethlehem which is in the gate! And the three mighty "men brake through the host of the Philistines, and drew water out of the well of "Bethlehem, and took it and brought it to David; nevertheless he would not drink "thereof, but poured it out unto the Lord. And he said, be it far from me that I "should do this! Is not this the blood of the men that went in jeopardy for their "lives? Therefore he would not drink it."

2 Sam. xxiii, 14,—17. 1 Chron, x. 16,—19.

2. "While the army of Alexander was upon the march against Darius, some "Macedonians had filled their bottles at a river and were bringing the water upon "mules. These people seeing Alexander greatly distressed with thirst, for it was in "the heat of the day, immediately filled a helmet with water, and presented it to "him. He asked them to whom they were carrying it? And they said, their sons: "but if our prince does but live, we shall get children, if we lose them. Upon this "he took the helmet in his hands, and seeing all the horsemen bending their heads "and fixing their eyes upon the water, he returned it without drinking. However "he praised the people that offered it, and said, if I alone drink, these good men will "be dispirited. The cavalry, who were witnesses to this act of temperance and "magnanimity cried out, 'Let us march: we are neither weary nor thirsty, nor shall "we even think ourselves mortal, while under the conduct of such a king.' At the "same time they put spurs to their horses."

Langhorne's Plutarch's Lives, Vol. iv. p. 283.

Digitized by Google

3. Nothing could be more distressful than the state of the Roman army, when they were traversing the deserts of Lybia under the command of Cato of Utica.

" As forward on the weary way they went
" Panting with drought and all with labour spent,
" Amidst the desert desolate and dry
" One chanc'd a little trickling spring to spy.
" Proud of the prize he drain'd the scanty store,
" And in his helmet to the chieftain bore.
" Around in crowds the thirsty legions stood,
" Their throats and clammy jaws with dust bestrew'd,
" And all with lustful eyes the liquid treasure view'd.
" Around the leader cast his careful look,
" Sternly the tempting envy'd gift he took,
" Held it, and thus the giver fierce bespoke:
" And think'st thou then that I want virtue most?
" Am I the meanest of this Roman host?
" Am I the first fond coward that complains,
" That shrinks unequal to these glorious plains?
" Am I in ease and infamy the first?
" Rather be thou, base as thou art, accurs'd,
" Thou that dar'st drink when all beside thee thirst.
" He said, and watchful stretching forth his hand
" Pour'd out the precious draught upon the strand."

Rowe's Lucan's Pharsalia, B. ix.

The peculiar circumstances of Sir Philip Sidney's death have supplied the first historical painter of the present age with a very interesting subject. No apology is necessary for the insertion of the following description:

Digitized by Google

"SIR PHILIP SIDNEY, mortally wounded, REJECTING the WATER offered to
"him, and ordering it to be first given to a WOUNDED SOLDIER."

"PAINTED by BENJAMIN WEST, Esquire, a native of the United States of America historical painter to his Majesty, and
"President of the Royal Academy of Arts."

"THE centre of this composition is occupied by the wounded hero, Sir Philip "Sidney, seated on a litter, who, whilst his wound is dressing by the attending "surgeons, is ordering the water, (which is pouring out for him to allay the extreme "thirst he suffered from the loss of blood) to be given to a wounded soldier, to whom "he points, in the second group to his right, who had cast a longing look towards it. "Behind, and to the left of Sidney, his uncle the Earl of Leicester, in dark armour, is "discovered as commander in chief, issuing his orders to the surrounding cavalry, as "engaged in the confusion of the contending armies. Among the several spirited "war horses that are introduced, that of Sidney, a white horse, is seen under the "management of his servant, but still restive and ungovernable. The portrait of "the artist is found to the right of the picture, the figure leaning on a horse in the "fore-ground, and contemplating the interesting scene before him. The back-"ground, and to the extreme distance of the horizon, the movements of the armies, "and the rage of battle are every where visible, enveloped in an atmosphere that has "fixed upon it the true aspect of danger and dismay, as legibly as the plastic art can "possibly depict their terrors to the feeling mind."

Communicated by Mr. Valentine Green, F. A. S.

Digitized by Google

N^o. 6.

JAMES BINDLEY, Esquire, F. A. S. has favoured me with an opportunity of seeing the three volumes published by the universities of Oxford and Cambridge on the death of Sir Philip Sidney. The following selection is made from them:

MUSARUM Martisque decus, Sidneie, valeto,
Vicisti candore genus, virtutibus annos,
Artibus æquales, generosis dotibus omnes,
Invidiam famâ, mundum pietatis amore,
Militiam vitæ tantâ cum laude peractam
Excipit æternus, Christo ducente, triumphus.

ALEX. NEVILE.

NON ego priscos celebrare versu
Conor heroas, nec ego Philippi
Aut Alexandri superantis orno
Laude triumphos.

Ast ego nostri celebro PHILIPPUM
Temporis, clari sobolem parentis
Qui fuit nostræ columen decusque
Nobile gentis.

Corda prægrandis dolor occupavit
Nostra, cum primum retulit peremptum
Fama SIDNÆUM: lachrymis obortis
Flevimus omnes.

Digitized by Google

Acrius curæ lachrymæque pungunt
Intus inclusæ: tacui, nec ullos
Edidi versus, neque præ dolore
Musa locuta est.

Nam gravis luctus citò non loquetur;
Scribimus serò, veniam precamur,
Nec tamen nostro minuentur atræ
Carmine curæ.

Flete SIDNÆUM juvenes peremptum,
Flete sublatum pueri senesque,
Uspiam si quæ lachrymæ supersunt,
Flete Philippum.

RICHARDUS SAVAGIUS.

NULLUM-ne tandem luctibus vestris modum
Ponetis, Angli? Numquid effuso genæ
Fletu madebūnt semper? An nullus mali
Hujus dolorem tollet aut minuet dies?
Res digna fletu scilicet longo: jacet
Flos ille gentis Anglicæ, Hispanæ timor,
Ætatis hujus splendor, et mundi decus,
Sidnæus heros, candidâ notus fide,
Virtute notus inclytâ, magnus foris,
Domique longè: vir, cui suas
Artes Minerva dederat, et Mavors suas:
Qui laude nullâ caruit: et, cum jam nihil
Ultra teneret terra quod possit dare,

Digitized by Google

Solum reliquit, posset ut cœlo frui:
Rectâque superas tendit ad sedes viâ.
Lugendus igitur anne laudandus magis,
Cui tale letum, vita cui talis fuit?

GULIELMUS SUADONUS.

CUM constitutum Dii Deæque venissent
Olim frequentes in locum, Iovis nutu,
De munerando te, Philippe, decretum est.
Minerva primò dona mentis adjecit,
Docilemque ad artes optimas voluntatem,
Tum doctus artes Phœbus et novenarum,
Chorus sororum contulit: dehinc fecit
Mars nec timentem prælio nec imbellem.
Hymenæe, faustas nuptias, opes Plute
Amplas dedisti; cætera ex Iovis dono
Data sunt abundè quælibet: Sed absentes
Parcæ negarunt invidæ dare ætatem.

RICHARDUS BUCERUS.

Dr. Thomas Thornton thus lamented the death of his beloved Pupil:

SI sic de famâ notum deplorat ademptum
Latior ut Camus turgidiorque fluat:
Si sic de facie notum fles Isidis unda
Ut jam sis lachrymis arida facta tuis:
Quì mihi commissum potero deflere PHILIPPUM,
Dum coluit ripas, nobilis Isi, tuas?
Cum videam hunc campum fœtum gravidumque futurâ
Messe, meis manibus qui modo cultus erat,

Digitized by Google

Fulgure ceu tactum decusso flore jacere,
Et promissa diu destituisse bona.
Nec tua mors deflenda magis, quam occasio mortis:
Tu, plus quam Martis, pacis alumnus eras.

Relligio, pietas, doctrina, modestia, candor,
Consilium prudens, non temerata fides,
Hæ te virtutes ornârunt: hæc tua vera
Gloria; non durus, non truculentus eras.

Quod Marte occideris, fueris cum pacis alumnus,
Æternum Pallas, tu breve vulnus habes.
Occidis heu medio veluti sol aureus axe,
Pronus in hesperias præcipitatus aquas.
O citius vestras, durissima numina, Parcæ,
Sensissetve utinam serius ille manus!
Post tantas curas ad maxima quæque paratum
Immiti decuit sic rapuisse manu?
Vel si vos ipsum voluistis flere peremptum
Molli nonne manu percutiendus erat?
Nec vixisse diu, facili nec morte perisse
Quis dolor hinc oritur? Spes quoque quanta cadit?
Nunc quâcunque jaces prænobile corpus in urnâ,
Est tumulus tanti nescius ipse boni
Hospite, terra, novo gaude. Capis una Philippum
Qui fuit excellens urbis et orbis honor.

THOMAS THORNTON.

Digitized by Google

PRINTED AT THE OFFICE OF
THOMAS WILSON AND SON,
HIGH-OUSEGATE, YORK.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

WIDENER
BOOK
NOV 1984
CANCELLED
MAR 29 1985

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google